

# Bible Questions and Answers



**Willie Martin**

# Bible Questions and Answers

By  
Willie Martin

**Y**OU ARE WELL AWARE, THAT THE BIBLE HAS ALWAYS BEEN SUBJECT TO ATTACK BY PAGANS, ATHEISTS AND AGNOSTICS, but it was not until modern times that questions concerning its validity have been entertained by our so-called "Ministers" who profess to proclaim its message.

It was about the middle of the nineteenth century that a "school" of higher criticism came into being and since that time its students, its adherents, have made militant advances in its Satanic efforts to discredit the Divine Revelation of the Scriptures. The results of their evil works have brought forth a harvest of unbelief that today infects the entire Christian Church.

This, modernism, the monstrous offspring spawned by this so-called higher criticism, has succeeded in deceiving millions of Americans into believing the Bible to be of human origin and subject to many errors. Thus the faith that was once held by most Americans, who accepted without mistrust the authenticity of the Scriptures, has been all but destroyed.

Much of this has been accomplished by asking questions, some hard, some ridiculous, some that are completely irrelevant, but all are questions Christians find hard to answer. Which is the reason for their presentation in the first place.

Following are some of the most popular questions, which have been answered with the best possible explanation and confirmed by the Scriptures.

## **(1) Question: Were there people before Adam and Eve?**

**Answer:** This question is almost always asked whenever atheists and agnostics are trying to confound or confuse a New Christian! It comes from a reading of: "So God created man in his own image, in the image

of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them. Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth..." (Genesis 1:27-28) Men have theorized for years about the possibility of the co-existence of another race of human beings upon the earth during the time of Adam. It must be recognized that there is considerable evidence to show that the earth was not only inhabited by a race(s), but as a result of the earth becoming void and without form, that race or races were apparently destroyed. But first let's look at the word "Replenish":

Replenish: 1). to make full or complete again, as by furnishing a new supply.

2). to supply again or the like.

3). of people. (New World Dictionary of the American Language, Second Edition page 1205)

Jeremiah the Prophet refers briefly to the existence of such a race(s), but he states that, as a result of the earth becoming void and without form, that race(s) were apparently destroyed. "I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light. I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved lightly. I beheld, and, lo, there was no man... I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the Lord, and by his fierce anger... For this shall the earth mourn, and the heavens above be black..." (Jeremiah 4:23-28)

Job also makes reference to a past age, a former time: "For enquire... of the former age, and prepare thyself to the search of their fathers." (Job 8:8) Job then relates: "For want and famine they were solitary; fleeing into the wilderness in former time desolate and waste." (Job 30:3)

Solomon relates: "There is no remembrance of former things..." (Exodus 1:11)

David relates: "Then the earth shook and trembled; the foundations also of the hills moved and were shaken, because he was wroth. There went up a smoke out of his nostrils, and fire out of his mouth devoured: coals were kindled by it. He bowed the heavens also, and came down: and darkness was under his feet. And he rode upon a cherub, and did fly: yea, he did fly upon the wings of the wind. He made darkness his secret place; his pavilion round about him were dark waters and thick clouds of the skies. At the brightness that was before him his thick clouds passed, hail stones and coals of fire.

The Lord also thundered in the heavens, and the Highest gave his voice: hail stones and coals of fire. Yea, he sent out his arrows, and scattered them; and he shot out lightning, and discomfited them. Then the channels of waters were seen, and the foundations of the world were discovered at thy rebuke, O Lord, at the blast of the breath of thy nostrils." (Psalms 18:7-15)

Isaiah said: "...let them shew the former things..." (Isaiah 41:22); Again: "Remember the former things of old—and from ancient times..." (Isaiah 46:9-10)

Then Isaiah relates a most revealing statement from God: "For, behold, I create new heavens (NOTE: a plural heavens: more than one) and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind." (Isaiah 65:17) Then we have God's Law to confirm the existence of people other than Adam. Cain's wife, which is another question in itself. "And Cain went out from the presence of the Lord—And Cain knew his wife..." (Genesis 4:16-17)

Now most "Ministers" will repeat that old, old, worn out statement, one which cannot stand a close inspection, hence the instincts of the atheists and agnostics to that fact, giving them more fuel for the consternation they are causing the New Christian: "Cain's wife was his 'sister.'" Choosing to completely ignore God's Law concerning this situation. "The nakedness of thy sister, the daughter of thy father, or daughter of thy mother, whether she be born at home, or born abroad, even their nakedness thou shalt not uncover—.

The nakedness of thy father's wife's daughter, begotten of thy father, she is thy sister, thou shalt not uncover her nakedness." (Leviticus 18:9, 11); "And if a man shall take his sister, his father's daughter, or his mother's daughter, and see her nakedness, and she see his nakedness; it is a wicked thing; and they shall be cut off in the sight of their people: he hath uncovered his sister's nakedness; he shall bear his iniquity." (Leviticus 20:17)

I can just hear the atheists and agnostics cry out: "But Cain has already broken God's Law once, so why wouldn't he do so a second time." and well he might; and there is ample evidence that he did sin time and time again, But now a second, third and even a fourth person must consent to his' breaking of God's Law.

His sister, his father (Adam) and his mother (Eve) must also consent to this violation of God's Law, not just Cain: Which would be consistent with the period of time involved, this would do violence to the Scriptures. Thus this answer is completely unacceptable. Thus, the only logical answer to the question is: Not only were there people on earth before, (Genesis 1:2) but there were others present when God, "formed" a "man" to till the ground, and who was first called "Adam" in Genesis 2:19.

## **(2) Question: What Is the Kingdom of God and When Was It Organized?**

**Answer:** The Children of Israel must have enjoyed a welcome respite from their difficult and tiring journey through the wilderness when they encamped before Mount Sinai. Upon command Moses went up into the mount to converse with God, who said to him: "...Thus shalt thou say to the house of Jacob, and tell the children of Israel; Ye have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles' wings, and brought you unto myself." (Exodus 19:3-4)

This message was addressed to the House of Jacob, the very House over which the Angel informed Mary that Jesus Christ would reign over forever. "And he (Jesus) shall reign over the House of Jacob, for ever; and

of his kingdom there shall be no end." (Luke 1:33) The Children of Israel were reminded of their deliverance from Egyptian bondage and their safe journey through the wilderness. The Lord continued on, saying, that if the Children of Israel would obey His voice and keep His covenant, they would be rewarded: "...then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for the earth is mine." (Exodus 19:5)

Having reminded Israel of their deliverance from Egypt and His willingness to constitute them a special treasure unto Him above all the other people of the earth if they would obey His voice and keep His covenant, the Lord proposed to make them His Kingdom. If they would do all He commanded, God declared: "And ye shall be unto Me A Kingdom of priests, and an holy nation..." (Exodus 19:6) Thus the Lord informed Israel they were to be above all nations and become a kingdom of administrators. But in order to function as His administrators, they were to be unto Him a Kingdom; that is His Kingdom.

Therefore it can be clearly seen that: The birth of the Kingdom of God is clearly set forth in the nineteenth and twentieth chapters of Exodus. So the answer to the question: What is the Kingdom of God, it was/is The House of Jacob, when was it organized: At Mt. Sinai.

### **(3) Question: Was Noah Ignorant of the Fact That the Juice of Grapes Will Ferment and Make Alcohol?**

**Answer:** It has been said by agnostics and atheists: "For Noah to live and grow Grapes for over 600 years and not know that Grapes would ferment and produce alcohol, that would make a man drunk, is just too farfetched for me to comprehend." This statement is in response to the following: "And Noah began to be an husbandman, and he planted a vineyard: And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent." (Genesis 9:20-21)

The explanation is a simple one, the Scriptures testify that Noah had not been a husbandman for 600 years; he only began to be one after the flood. But the main reason as to why Noah did not know wine would ferment is obvious. The atmospheric conditions that made the flood possible also

prevented fermentation prior to the Deluge -- at least not with the rapidity with which fermentation takes place today.

Hence, Noah's first experience with the result of drinking intoxicating grape juice came after the Deluge, and after he had made wine from the first grapes he had cultivated under these new world conditions. In fact, this is one more proof that climatic conditions were greatly altered following the Flood.

#### **(4) Question: What Was Ham's Sin That Caused Noah to Curse Ham's Descendants?**

**Answer:** This incident has been puzzling to many because the related account does not give easily accessible information. Let's see if we can discern what Ham's sin was from the facts given. We are told that Noah, in a drunken sleep, lay uncovered in his tent:

"And he (Noah) drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren without. And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it upon both their shoulders, and went backward, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their faces were backward, and they saw not their father's (Noah's) nakedness. And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done unto him."  
[1]

What did Ham do to his father that enabled Noah to know, so that the record states: "And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done unto him."

It is only reasonable to assume, that if Ham had merely looked upon his father in a drunken stupor, even though he was unclothed, Noah would not have known this when he awoke, nor, even if he had known it, would it have been justification to bring down such a curse as was pronounced upon the offspring of Ham. "And he (Noah) said, Cursed be Canaan [2]; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren." [3]

Now, we know that Noah was a Just man, because the Scriptures state that was so: "...Noah was a Just man and perfect in his generations (Race), and Noah walked with God." [4]

Such being the case, we know that Noah would have had to have a reason for him to have placed such a curse upon Ham's descendants.

Many, many people, including "Ministers" who profess(d) to have been "Called" man of God, have passed severe judgement upon Noah for placing such a far-reaching curse upon Canaan, the son of Ham, if all Ham did was to look upon (at) his father while he lay exposed in a drunken stupor in his tent. And if their supposition were correct, we would have no alternative but to agree that the curse was all out of proportion to the crime committed. However, this would have been in contradiction to the Scripture quoted above. [5] So, let us examine and analyze the facts given in the account and see if this was all Ham did.

First, let's consider the fact that evidently Ham was racially distinct from either Japheth or Shem. Is there any justification for the conclusion that the mother of Ham was not the mother of Japheth and Shem?

What followed, and the means used by God to prevent the wife Noah had with him in the Ark from bearing more children to Noah, other than Ham, would so indicate. It is certain, as events later recorded in the Scriptures show, that the strain inherited by Ham was not inherited by either Japheth or Sham. Thus, while Noah was the father of all three sons, it can be deduced, by a comprehensive study of the Scriptures, that they could not have had the same mother!

Now, Ham being the youngest, it would follow that the woman who was Noah's wife when he entered the ark would be Ham's mother, but not the mother of either Japheth or Shem. While the Bible is silent on this point, the evidence furnished in the account would lead to such a conclusion.

Thus, while the facts are hidden from general understanding, sufficient evidence is given so that those seeking the truth may comprehend the matter. To help you in understanding how we reach our conclusion, let's regress a little to an earlier scene: "And Noah builded an altar unto the



Lord..." [6] This became an official place of sacrifice, with the family, the entire family, in attendance at that altar service and at subsequent services. Ham, of a necessity, would be one of them, and one who, due to his heritage, through his mother, inherited from those who were in rebellion to God in the antediluvian days, would detest the altar services. But since Noah was his father and the head of the household, he would be compelled to attend whenever Noah officiated.

The revulsion to the spiritual things of God was a foremost character trait in Nimrod, a descendant of Ham. This character trait was also evident in many of the line of Ham, as made clear in the biblical record of those early times. According to Deuteronomy, a man must be physically perfect to officiate at the Lord's altar and this law, laid down for Israel, was no doubt in full operation in the time of Noah, as were many of the other laws later codified for the nation Israel's instruction. "He that is wounded in the stones, or hath his privy member cut off [7], shall not enter into the congregation of the Lord." [8]

Therefore it is obvious, that while Noah was in this helpless and unclothed condition, Ham saw an opportunity to prevent his father from continuing the family altar services. Ham evidently did one of two things: He,

**(1) Castrated his father or,**

**(2) Cut off his privy member!**

And he then went out and told his brothers what he had done. Thus Shem and Japheth not willing to behold their father in such a condition took the precautions, as stated in the account, when they went to cover him. One other fact to substantiate this outstanding finding is the Hebrew word "ervah," [9] translated "nakedness" in the 23rd verse of the ninth chapter of Genesis, for the same Hebrew word used in Leviticus, chapter 18, and refers to sex acts (misuse) forbidden by God. The Divine condemnation is that "it is wickedness."

There is nothing in the Scriptures forbidding the seeing of another undressed as is the case with doctors, nurses and those who, in the course

of duty or by accident, happen to see one unclothed. Had this been the case with Ham, and with no overt act on his part, there would have been no reason whatever for the curse that was pronounced upon his son and all his descendants. Just after the flood we find the following: "And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them (Noah and his three sons -- He did not exclude Noah in this blessing), be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish (here again we see God use the word replenish, hence our previous presentation gains even more confirmation) the earth." [10]

Then turning to the genealogical tables, it is further noted that in every instance, when the death of a man is mentioned, it is also stated, "and he begat," then goes on to name the first born and then naming further sons and daughters.

But, in the case of Noah, there is a difference, for immediately following the account of Ham's sin, and what he had do to his father, the statement is made: "And Noah lived after the flood three hundred and fifty years. And all the days of Noah were nine hundred and fifty years: and he died." [11] It is evident that no more children, either sons or daughters were born to him. Further substantiation is found in: "And the sons of Noah.—Shem, and Ham, and Japhet—These are the three sons of Noah: and of them was the whole earth overspread (with the White Race)." [12] The evidence is clear, Noah had no more children. All this evidence proves that Ham's sin was not just "looking" upon (at) his father while he was naked. Ham's sin, that brought about the curse, was: Ham, either (1) Castrated or (2) Cut off the privy member of his father!

### **(5) Question: Was the wife of Moses a "Negro."**

**Answer:** Because of the following Scripture.

"And Miriam and Aaron spake against Moses because of the Ethiopian woman whom he had married: for he had married an Ethiopian woman."

A great deal of nonsense has been written and taught about this "*Ethiopian*" wife Moses. The use of the term "*Ethiopian*" in referring to Moses' wife has prevented many from understanding to whom the reference was

made. It is obvious that Miriam and Aaron described her in that way to voice their contempt for her. The Rev. W. M. H. Milner in his booklet, *The Russian Chapters of Ezekiel* says: "In Bible geography there were two Cushite areas: one in Asia and one in Africa. Similarly the Greek writers allow for an Eastern and Western Ethiopia." He then goes on to show that Arabia was a part of ancient Eastern Ethiopia. Hence Zipporah would have been a descendent of Shem, who was the grandfather of Abraham.

Thus Moses was keeping the Laws as given to him by God and verified by Scripture and that none of the children of Israel was to marry outside of their own race. That Moses' wife was not a "Negro" is substantiated by the story of Phinehas as related in Chapter 25 of the Book of Numbers: "And behold, one of the children of Israel came and brought unto his brethren a Midianitish woman (Negro woman) in the sight of Moses, and in the sight of all the congregation of the children of Israel.—And when Phinehas—saw it, he rose up from among the congregation, and took a javelin (spear) in his hand;

And he went after the man of Israel into the tent, and thrust both of them through, the man of Israel, and the woman through her belly—And the Lord spake unto him my covenant of peace: And he shall have it, and his seed after him, even the covenant of an everlasting priesthood—because, he was zealous for his God, and made an atonement for the children of Israel." [13]

The Book of Jasher relates the story in more detail; so by a careful study we find: "And Moses was eighteen years old when he fled from Egypt from the presence of Pharaoh, and he fled and escaped to the camp of Kikianus, which at that time was besieging Cush.

And Moses was nine years in the camp of Kikianus king of Cush, all the time that they were besieging Cush, and Moses went out and came in with them. And the king and princes and all the fighting men loved Moses, for he was great and worthy, his stature was like a noble lion, his face was like the sun, and his strength was like that of a lion, and he was counsellor to the king. And at the end of nine years Kikianus was seized with a mortal

disease, and his illness prevailed over him, and he died on the seventh day. So his servants embalmed him and carried him and buried him opposite the city gate to the north of the land of Egypt... Now after the death of Kikianus king of Cush it grieved his men and troops greatly on account of the war. So they said one to the other, Give us counsel what we are to do at this time, as we have resided in the wilderness nine years away from our homes...

Now therefore let us go and make a king over us, and let us remain in the siege until the city was delivered up to us. And they wished to choose on that day a man for king from the army of Kikianus, and they found no object of their choice like Moses to reign over them. And they hastened and stripped off each man his garments and cast them upon the ground, and they made a great heap and placed Moses thereon.

And they rose up and blew with trumpets and called out before him, and said, May the king (Moses) live, may the king live! And all the people and nobles swore unto him to hive him for a wife Adoniah the queen, the Cushite, wife of Kikianus (a Negro woman), and they made Moses king over them on that day—Moses turned not his heart nor his eyes to the wife of Kikianus all the days that he reigned over Cush.

And Moses feared the Lord his God all his life, and Moses walked before the Lord in truth, with all his heart and soul, he turned not from the right way all the days of his life; he declined not from the way either to the right or to the left, in which Abraham, Isaac and Jacob had walked—

And in the fortieth year of the reign of Moses over Cush, Moses was sitting on the royal throne whilst Adoniah (the Negro woman) the queen was before him, and all the nobles were sitting around him. And Adoniah the queen said before the king and the princes, What is this thing which you, the children of Cush, have done for this long time? Surely you know that for forty years that this man (Moses) has reigned over Cush he has not approached me(had not went to bed



and made love with the Negro woman), nor has he served the gods of the children of Cush—" [14]

## **(6) Question: What Were the Changes That Produced the Dead Sea?**

**Answer:** The Bible not only accurately recounts the history of people and nations, but it also provides data concerning topographical changes upon the Earth and its records are reliable. The true findings of Geologists and Scientists demonstrate the truth of the Bible statements and prove the accuracy of its evidence.

The Dead Sea did not exist prior to the time of the Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah. We are told that these two cities were built on a plain, watered by the River Jordan as it flowed to the sea. "And Lot lifted up his eyes, and beheld all the plain of Jordan, that it was well watered everywhere, before the Lord destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah..." [15] Lot chose this plain because of that very reason, "it was well watered." When the invading kings fought against Sodom and Gomorrah, at the time Lot was taken prisoner and Abraham rescued him the plain is described as being full of lime pits. "And the vale of Siddim was full of slime pits..." [16] Job tells us that in this same locality: "...and the rock poured me out rivers of oil." [17]

The River Jordan at that time flowed through this plain and passed on through a well-defined course between the Sinai Peninsula and Arabia, until it emptied into the Gulf of Akaba, which is a part of the Red Sea. This original river bed of the Jordan can be traced today. When the cities of the plain were destroyed by fire, the nature of this territory, with its asphalt and oil-laden soil, greatly augmented the great catastrophe. The intense heat and underground explosions made the present territory, now occupied by the Dead Sea, one of the deep depressions upon the earth's surface.

The River Jordan thereupon emptied into this great cavity and it has never been able to overflow this depression. Evaporation among other causes have kept it within these bounds. The old course to the Gulf of Akaba is mute testimony of this disaster which changed the topography of Palestine and prevented the Jordan River from flowing into the sea. The asphalt is gone and the oil is no more. Moses said, in recording these facts, that the Vale of Siddim is now the Dead (Salt) Sea. "All these were joined together in the vale of Siddin which is [18] the salt (Dead) sea." [19]

One last note; For years skeptics were saying that there were no such cities as Sodom and Gomorrah. Their reason for making such statements was because they were unable to locate the site of these two cities. If they had read the Bible account carefully, they would have realized that the Dead Sea covered the ruins. However, in recent years archaeologists have proved this to be the case. So, the plain of the Jordan became a thing of the remote past. Therefore the "plain" of Jordan, once a fertile and well-watered country and the ancient cities of Sodom and Gomorrah are beneath the waves of the Dead (Salt) Sea.

### **(7) Question: The Fire of God; What is it?**

**Answer:** The record of the Fire of God, or Fire coming down from God, is first recorded in: "And there came out A fire from the Lord, and consumed the two hundred and fifty men that offered incense." [20]

The second time the "fires of the Lord" appeared or fell in the sight of men was when it was used by God in a demonstration, by Elijah, of the might and power of God during the trial with the prophets of Baal. "Then the fire of the Lord fell..." [21] Then briefly: "And after the earthquake a fire; but the Lord was not in the fire..." [22]

Again when: "Then the king sent unto him a captain of fifty with his fifty—and Elijah answered—If I be a man of God, then let fire come down from heaven, and consume thee and thy fifty. And there came down fire from heaven, and consumed him and his fifty. Again also he sent unto him another captain of fifty with his fifty—

And the fire of God came down from heaven, and consumed him and his fifty." [23] Again when Solomon was dedicating the Temple -- the House of the Lord: "Now when Solomon had made an end of praying, the fire came down from heaven, and consumed the burnt offering and the sacrifices..." [24] Then during Jobs trial: "...the fire of God is fallen from heaven..." [25]

There are many more verses which could be quoted, but space does not permit: A partial list is as follows Psalm 18:8, 21:9, 50:3, 97:3, Isaiah 66:15, Ezekiel 38:19, 38:22, 39:6, Hosea 8:14 and etc. This "fire of God" appears to be comparable with the energy released by the splitting of the atom. Ezekiel and Esdras describe the destruction of the armies of evil aggression in the conflict of the ages in the following terms: "For in my jealousy and in the fire of my wrath have I spoken...And I will plead against him with Pestilence and with Blood; and I will rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that are with him, an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire, and brimstone." [26]; "And after this I beheld, and, lo, all they which were gathered together to subdue him were sore afraid, and yet durst fight. And, lo, as he saw the violence of the multitude that came, he neither lifted up his head, nor held sword, nor any instrument of war: But only I saw that he sent out of his mouth as it had been a blast of fire, and out of his lips a flaming breath, and out of his tongue he cast out sparks and tempests. And they were all mixed together; the blast of fire, the flaming breath, and the great tempest; and fell with violence upon the multitude which was prepared to fight, and burned them up every one, so that upon a sudden of an innumerable multitude nothing was to be perceived, but only dust and smell of smoke: when I saw this I was afraid." [27]

### **(8) Question: Why Did God Select the Earth for the Abode of the Human Race?**

**Answer:** As Christians we recognize the fact that God is at the centre of all creation; therefore, His over-all plans and purposes are for the limitless universe, not just the Earth.

Therefore, from the evidence and information available to us we can deduce that God, in choosing the dwelling place of man and the size assigned as the stature of those who are to inherit all things with His Son (Jesus), God in His Wisdom selected the Planet at the point of division which is the mean (A Mathematical Phrase) between the greatest and the smallest in creation for the abode and development of the human race.

This is one way to account for the earth, a mere speck in the immensity of space, becoming man's habitation, for, from the earth as his vantage point, man can look in either direction. Through the telescope, peering into the heavens, he beholds the infinity of greatness. Solomon evidently had this in mind when he spoke of the mysteries of God and the honour that comes to men who are able to search out these secrets. On one occasion he referred to the greatness in the heavens above and to the minuteness in the depths of the earth below, concluding that all is a mystery and un-searchable. "The heaven for height, and the earth for depth —is un-searchable." [28]

### **(9) Question: What Is the Origin of the Present Hate-god Campaign and What Nation Originally Made War against God's Throne?**

**Answer:** Amalek, Grandson of Esau, came out and fought against Israel while they were encamped at Rephidim. Moses told Joshua, Captain of the Armies of Israel, to choose men and go out to resist Amalek's attack. He in turn would stand on the top of the hill with the Rod of God in his hand. Joshua did as Moses commanded him and fought against the Amalekites while Moses, taking Aaron and Hur with him, went up to the top of the hill.

While Moses held up his hands toward heaven Israel prevailed in battle, but when he lowered them the tide of battle turned in favor of Amalek. Presently Moses' arms became weary, so they placed a boulder for him to sit upon and Aaron and Hur took stations on each side of him supporting his arms. This they did until the sun went down and Joshua completely defeated Amalek, giving no quarter. The story is related in Exodus 17:8-13.



Because the hand of Amalek had been raised against the Throne of Jehovah, the Lord declared He would be at war with Amalek from generation to generation. To show that Amalek did raise his hand against the Throne of Jehovah, we present the following: "And ye shall be unto me a kingdom—" [29] Thus making God the King of Israel. Later, when Balak hired Balaam to curse Israel, Balaam blessed the people instead. At that time he pointed out the fact that Amalek was the first of the nations to war against Israel, but in the latter days his posterity would perish forever. "And when he looked on Amalek, he took up his parable, and said, Amalek was the first of the nations—But his latter end shall be that he perish for ever." [30]

### **(10) Question: What Did God Use to Make the Sun, Earth, Stars, Planets and All the Known Elements.**

**Answer:** When we pause to consider God's mighty work of Creation in the beginning, it is important to note the primary definition of the word "Create" which means "To cause to be" or "To come into existence."

Scientists today have become cognizant of what the Bible has all the time declared to be so, that the Universe was Created out of Pure Energy, but even knowing this, they do not, or will not, recognize God as the Creator. Contemplating the majestic order of creation, John provides the information that in the beginning Jesus (The Word) existed: In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God—The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made." [31]

The phrase "came into existence" implies that substance, or matter was non-existent prior to the first creative act. Science has now arrived at this same profound conclusion. An article titled "Science Proves the Story of Creation" by Norman Carlisle, in the magazine "Coronet" in December 1949, reports recent scientific findings in relation to the creation of the universe.

Throughout the ages men of God have accepted these facts by faith which are only now becoming apparent to men of science who, in spite of this revelation, still refuse to give God the honour and glory. The story published in Cornet is fascinating and breathtaking as it tells how scientists have contributed the results of their research to reconstruct a graphic picture of the creation of the universe. Many mysteries that have baffled men for centuries have now been solved. This article is recommended reading for every Bible student, for it throws interesting light upon the authenticity of the records of the Scriptures.

Mr. Carlisle points out that, whether by the examination of radioactivity in the ancient rock structure of the earth, or the study of the revolutions of the Milky Way and their effect upon star clusters, or in the examination of the tremendous speed of a fleeing universe reversed to its starting point, science has now been able to pin-point the time of creation. Through mathematical calculations involving all these factors, it is now recognized that the universe was born in a matter of minutes, in a single tremendous act of Creation in a given place in space.

### **(11) Question: Why Does God Permit Evil?**

**Answer:** The reason is, he proves, or tests, His people to see whether or not they will reject evil and accept good, keeping His Commandments and Laws and serve Him alone, training them in the way they should act and conduct themselves in His service, in His Kingdom.

This is much the same as mankind does with inductees into the armed services. Where they have to undergo a period to see if they will qualify to serve, to train them in the way they should conduct themselves in the services.

### **(12) Question: Who Was Melchizedek, The King of Salem?**

**Answer:** After the rescue of Lot by Abraham, we are introduced to a very interesting person. That person was Melchizedek, King of Salem, and He was none other than Shem, the Son of Noah. Shem, as a preacher of

righteousness was, at that time, King of Salem, the Ancient name of JeruSALEM. "And Melchizedek king of Salem—was the priest of the most High God." [32]

It was the celebration of what was afterward known as the Lord's Supper. The significance of this was well known in Abraham's day. A Priest (Preacher of Righteousness) after the order of Melchizedek broke the bread and gave the wine to Abraham. Later, it is declared that Jesus Christ is a Priest forever of the same order.[33] Between the reign of this king, to whom Abraham gave tithes and from whom he received the sacraments, and the coming of Jesus Christ, who was to continue the office forever, is a very interesting period in history. During that time Abraham's seed grew into a multitude of people. At the beginning of a new dispensation Jesus instituted anew the giving of the bread and wine, and the seed of Abraham received this in memory of His Sacrifice for them.

### **(13) Question: What actually happened when Saul consulted the Witch of En-Dor?**

**Answer:** Spiritualists sometimes cite Saul's experience as evidence of the ability of men to consult the dead and to receive from them information about the future. But they fail to point to the results following such dealings with familiar spirits, an example of which the Bible sets forth as the consequence of Saul's disobedience to the law. "So Saul died for his transgression which he committed against the Lord, even against the word of the Lord, which he kept not, and also for asking counsel of one that had familiar spirit, to enquire of it." [34]

Let it be known to those who wish to cite the appearance of Samuel as evidence that a medium can bring up the dead take note that the witch of En-dor, herself was surprised and shocked when Samuel actually did appear. She had expected to deal with a familiar spirit as in the past, but evidently God intervened directly and raised up the prophet to rebuke Saul. This Divine intervention terrified the woman. Therefore as a result Saul, the King, was revealed to her as being present and this increased her discomfiture. Nowhere in the Scriptures does the Bible deny the fact of

the possibility of dealing with familiar spirits, although the practice is absolutely forbidden.

All those who do this are under Divine Condemnation. Neither does the Bible indicate, other than in this experience, by Saul, that the departed dead themselves are involved in such communications, But it does declare that such supernatural manifestations are the result of evil spirits impersonating the dead. God's Israel people are forbidden to have any dealings with them, and since Saul knew the Law of the Lord, he sinned presumptuously in going to consult the witch of En-dor, death followed as a result of his sin.

### **(14) Question: Why Are Two Different Prices Recorded for the Threshing Floor David Purchased for the Temple Site?**

**Answer:** The Prophet of God came to David and told him he was to set up an altar in the threshing floor of Araunah.[35]

The King immediately went to Araunah who was at that time threshing wheat upon his threshing floor. The Angel of the Lord was standing near the threshing floor and Araunah turned and saw Him (Araunah was interpreted by the translators to be "Ornan" in 1 Chronicles 21. His four sons also saw the Angel of the Lord and they went and hid themselves [36]. When Araunah (Ornan) saw David coming, he went out to meet him and David asked him the price he wanted for the threshing floor.

The King (David) said he wished to purchase it for an altar unto the Lord so that the plague might be stayed. Araunah offered to give David the threshing floor and the necessary oxen to make the sacrifice. David replied, however, that he would purchase it from him, saying: "...I will not take that which is thine for the Lord, nor offer burnt offerings without cost." [37] David thus refers to the need of giving to the Lord that which had cost him something. It would be well for Christians to consider the importance of this testimony of a Great King. God requires that we honour the Lord with our substance and with the first fruits of our increase, not with someone else's possession's or with that which is at no cost to us.

If David had accepted the offer made by Araunah (Ornan), it would have been Araunah's sacrifice not David's, so David purchased the threshing floor. Now, in recording the purchase made by David,[38] declares he (David) paid fifty shekels of silver for it: "...So David bought the threshing floor and the oxen for fifty shekels of gold by weight." [39] This apparent discrepancy in the record has been used by atheists and agnostics in their attacks upon the Bible as they endeavour to prove it to be contradictory. On the surface, the above two different prices would apparently give credibility to their criticism. The fact is that both accounts are right, the first and smaller amount [40] being paid for just the threshing floor itself, while the larger amount [41] was given for the entire field containing the threshing floor. In referring to the Hebrew word "MAKOM," translated "threshing floor" in 1 Chronicles 21:22, The Companion Bible has this to say about this passage: "Hebrew 'MAKOM,' as in Ruth 4:10.

Referring to the whole place, afterward the Temple area. Not Hebrew 'GOREN,' as in 2 Samuel 24:24, which was merely the threshing floor, as in Ruth 3:2. Hence 600 shekels of gold for the former, but only 50 shekels for the latter. Two distinct transactions." So, after the purchase(s) were completed, David built an altar there and placed his sacrifice upon it. Then fire came down from heaven,[42] consuming the offering. The plague was stayed, for the Lord answered David when he sacrificed to Him at the threshing floor as he was directed. Later on this threshing floor, and the field surrounding it, became the site of the Temple that Solomon built unto the Lord.

### **(15) Question: Why Is Noah, Who Was the Tenth in Generation from Adam, Called the Eighth Preacher of Righteousness.**

**Answer:** The line is given from Adam, through Seth, to Noah, the eighth preacher of righteousness.

"And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness..." [43]

But Noah was the tenth in generation. He was but the eighth in the priestly line for Enoch was translated before his father died and did not come to the priestly office [44].

Methuselah, the son of Enoch, took the office from his grandfather Jared, the father of Enoch. Methuselah, in turn, outlived his son Lamech, thus the office passed directly to his grandson Noah, the son of Lamech.[45] Thus Noah became the eighth Preacher of Righteousness, though the tenth in generation, because these two, Enoch and Lamech, never succeeded to the priestly office.

### **(16) Question: What Are the Astronomical Facts Demonstrating the Validity of Joshua's Long Day?**

**Answer:** The battle against the five kings was at its height when Joshua issued his famous prayer.

"Then spake Joshua to the Lord—in the sight of Israel, Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Ajalon. And the sun stood still, and the moon stayed, until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies—So the sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and hasted not to go down about a whole day. And there was no day like that before it or after it, that the Lord harkened unto the voice of a man..." [46]

Without exception atheists, agnostics and skeptics have made all manner of fun of such a day as is described in the Book of Joshua. Theologians and church members have questioned the accuracy of the account. With few exceptions Bible Dictionaries and Encyclopaedias either ignore it altogether or declare Joshua was mistaken, assuming the day seemed to have been lengthened because of the extensive marching and fighting on the part of the Israelites.

The stock-in-trade argument against its occurrence is that if the earth, sun and moon remained in the positions as described by Joshua, the earth would have had to stop its spinning. This, we are told, would have been disastrous as the earth turns upon its axis at the rate of about 1000 miles per hour.

To suddenly stop turning would bring chaos, not only because of the loss of gravity, but the earth itself would fly to pieces. There is no way of knowing exactly what would happen if the earth did stop spinning. However, even if their arguments are sound, there is still another explanation showing how the long day could occur without effecting the turning of the earth upon its axis. It is a law of physics that every force acts independently of every other. While the earth is spinning, a force which is independent of the force causing this spin could be applied, affecting the polar regions and causing the earth to turn over upon a second axis independent of the polar axis of the earth without affecting in any degree its original spinning.

This can be illustrated (demonstrated) with a spinning top or gyroscope which can be turned over without affecting its spinning. The north pole could be made to make a complete circle, or one revolution, returning to its former position while the earth continued to spin on its axis and move forward in its path around the sun. At the same time, through the new motion given to the poles, a given point on earth would be kept directly under the sun for the duration of this turnover.

The temporary second motion given to the earth would not interfere with the effects produced by the continuation of the spinning of the Earth upon its own axis or its movement around the Sun.

The only recognized change would be that the sun would remain in an apparently stationary position over the point where upon the earth the new axis would be established, caused by the turning of the poles. This relative position would be maintained even while the earth spun upon its own axis as long as the ratio of turning given to the poles was such that it compensated for the surface movement at a given point directly under the sun.

It is not our purpose to say that this is what did happen, for we do not know, however it is our objective to show what could have happened! That the relative positions of the Earth, Sun and Moon could be maintained, as requested by Joshua, without affecting in the least the

Earth's motion, both in its spinning upon its axis and in its movement around the Sun. If you are not willing, because of unbelief or not understanding the physical laws of all of God's creation.

Consider another interesting thought which has been interjected by some. But even that thought is merely an extension of the foregoing presentation. The Biblical account establishes the fact of an astronomical disturbance of great intensity which preceded the beginning of Joshua's "long day." It was so severe that great stones came down from heaven so that more of the enemies of Israel died from this shower of stones (meteorites) than were slain by the armies of Joshua.[47]

The context clearly indicates that a tremendous meteoric shower preceded the event which caused the earth, sun and moon to remain in the relative positions as described by Joshua. This condition could have been the result of an interspace visitor (Comet, small planet or Asteroid) come into our solar system, showering the earth with great meteoric stones, and at the same time exert such a tremendous influence at the polar regions, causing the earth's axis to make one complete rotation? The field of force responsible for holding the axis of the earth in its present position could have momentarily interfered with by the close sweep of a comet or other celestial body with a highly magnetic core.

This body could have induced a secondary field of force, acting upon the earth, which is itself a magnet, much as a magnet impulse acts upon the armature of a rotor, causing it to turn. The influence thus exerted upon the earth by a new field of force would have none of the evil effects, and the duration of those effects would be drastically reduced, from a direct contact between a celestial visitor and the earth, but it would nevertheless exert a tremendous pull upon it.

Thus, when the earth had turned half way over, it would continue on and complete the revolution, even though the magnetic mass had passed on beyond the earth's orbit by that time, and right itself again in the original field of force.



All this would be possible if a comet or other celestial body passed close enough to the earth to set up a powerful field of force. The fact that a spectacular meteoric shower preceded the long day clearly indicates that such a heavenly visitor did graze the earth's surface as it sped through the heavens in its path around the sun.

Can there be any doubt that, here we have one of the most interesting accounts in the Scriptures of a physical phenomena that effected the relative motions of our sun, moon and earth. It is an account of a stupendous miracle wrought for the benefit of Israel. Who is the person who can question the power of Almighty God. For it is beyond question that He who created all things could surely impose upon that creation the conditions which made the event recorded in the Book of Joshua possible. And still not break any of the laws of physics which He (God) Himself set in motion during the creation of all things.

### **Question: Why Does the Bible Declare That Solomon Sat upon the Throne of the Lord?**

**Answer:** Following the death of David, the statement is made: "Then Solomon sat on The Throne of The Lord..." [48]

The significant reference to Solomon sitting upon the Throne of the Lord is overlooked by many. The full purport of its meaning is lost to them because they refuse to recognize that the Kingdom established at Mount Sinai is the Kingdom over which Jesus Christ is to rule when He takes the Throne of His father David and reigns over the House of Jacob forever.[49] Christian men and women have overlooked a fundamental fact that, where there is a Throne, there must also be a kingdom; for a throne cannot exist apart from a kingdom.

It therefore follows that, if Solomon sat upon the Throne of the Lord, then The Kingdom over which that Throne is established must of a necessity be the Kingdom of God, for His Throne cannot exist over any kingdom other than His Own. Therefore, if Solomon sat upon the throne of the Lord and reigned over all Israel, then all Israel comprise the people of the Kingdom of God upon Earth.

It cannot be otherwise, When God organized Israel into a Kingdom at Mt. Sinai, He said to them: "And ye shall be unto me a Kingdom of Priests..." [50] This is confirmed by the statement in Hosea expressing God's relationship to His people: "I will be thy king..." [51]

Therefore, it is evident that, The Throne in Israel is the Throne of the Lord, and is of course to be occupied by men of the Royal Line of David, and is to be given ultimately to our Lord and King, Jesus Christ, when He returns in triumph to receive it. The relationship established at Mt. Sinai between God and Israel when the people of the House of Jacob were organized into His Kingdom, has never been abrogated; and that relationship continues to this very day!!! Now you know what Jesus was making reference to when He told the scribes and Pharisees, who had usurped the rulership over Israel from it legitimate leaders, when He said: "Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken from you..." [52]

Also, with this information the parable of the Wheat and the Tares becomes clear and understandable: "Another parable put he forth unto them, saying. The Kingdom of Heaven (God's Kingdom) is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field (Christ sowed the good seed: Adam, but)...while men slept (descendants of Adam), his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat (Satan when he seduced Eve: which brought forth Cain), and went his way.

But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also (Ham who was a descendant of Cain through his mother). So the servants (Angels) of the householder (Jesus) came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares (The Angels ask of Christ, if you sowed good seed then where did the tares come from)? He (Jesus) said unto them (Angels), An enemy (Satan) hath done this.

The servants (Angels) said unto him (Christ), Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest (end of the world) I will say to the reapers, gather ye together first the tares(See the evil ones are to be gathered first (no Rapture) the enemies of Christ are to be gathered First!),

and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn (and where is the barn? Of course it is on earth)." [53]

Jesus then goes on to explain the parable: "...and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; the field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; The enemy that sowed (seduced Eve) them is the devil (Satan); the harvest is the end of the world (age); and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world(age). The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom (and where is His kingdom Jesus just told you it is the world) all things that offend, and them that do iniquity (do you think for even a moment that the wicked could enter Heaven?); And shall cast them into a furnace of fire..." [54]

This, then, brings to light an interesting question in view of the untenable position taken by some theologians and "Ministers" that the Throne of David is no longer in existence and that it cannot now be occupied by a line of Kings of the House of David reigning over Israel (at least a portion of Israel).

If this were true, then how could God fulfil His promise to give that throne to His Son? If God is to be true to His promise, that throne must still be in existence, and to have been occupied by an unbroken line of rulers from the time of David to the present day.

The existence of the Kingdom itself must be a fact of recorded history, over which a king has exercised ruler-ship. The Throne of the Lord has continued as promised without a break and today a reigning monarch of the line of David is sitting upon that throne ruling over part of the House of Israel.

God has not forsaken His people; He has kept His word: "...I will not cast them away, neither will I abhor them, to destroy them utterly, and to break my covenant with them: for I am the Lord their god. But I will for their

sakes remember the covenant of their ancestors, whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the heathen, that I might be their God: I am the Lord." [55]

The Northern ten-tribed Kingdom of Israel, or the House of Israel, is a fact of recorded history and is represented today in the Anglo-Saxon, Germanic, Celtic people and the throne established in the British Isles is the Throne of David! For if that Throne is not still in existence then there is no Throne for Jesus Christ to receive when He returns!

### **Question: Who Were the Sons of God Who Married the Daughters of Men?**

**Answer:** The Bible relates that the Sons of God married the Daughters of Men: "And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, That the Sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose." [56]

Who were these sons of God? The Scriptures very clearly show that they were personalities apart from human creation. That a Satanic personality entered the Garden of Eden for the purpose of tempting man. So, too, in the days of Noah, the evidence indicates that these sons of God were not of the human race. The Book of Job tells of the sons of God presenting themselves before the Lord, "and Satan came also among them."

"Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them." [57] The discussion there had to do with earthly matters. Satan accused men of serving God for what he received and consequently God allowed Job to be tested. The test was watched with marked interest by those assembled. It is also declared in the Bible that when the earth Was created, eons of ages ago, the morning stars sang together and the sons of God shouted for joy. "...when I laid the foundations of the earth?...When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?" [58]

In the Book of Enoch it is stated that angels, the children of heaven, saw the daughters of men and observed that they were fair, so they married

whomsoever they pleased. "It happened after the sons of men had multiplied in those days--daughters were born to them, elegant and beautiful. [59] And when the angels, the sons of heaven, beheld them, they became enamoured of them, saying to each other: Come, let us select for ourselves wives from the progeny of men, and let us beget children. Then their leader Samyaza (Satan) said to them; I fear that you may perhaps be indisposed to the performance of this enterprise; And that I alone shall suffer for so grievous a crime. But they answered him and said: We all swear; And bind ourselves by mutual execrations, that we will not change our intention, but execute our projected undertaking. Then they swore all together, and all bound themselves by mutual execrations. Their whole number was two hundred... descended upon Ardis, which is the top of Mt. Armon. That mountain, therefore, they called Armon, because they had sworn upon it, and bound themselves by mutual execrations. Then they took wives, each choosing for himself; whom they began to approach, and with whom they cohabited; teaching them sorcery, incantation, and the dividing of roots and trees.

And they conceiving brought forth giants [60]; Whose stature was each three hundred cubits. These devoured all which the labor of men produced; until it became impossible to feed them; When they turned themselves against men, in order to devour them; And began to injure birds, beasts, reptiles, and fishes, to eat their flesh one after another, and to drink their blood [61]..." [62]

It is stated also that in the days of Jared, two hundred angles descended for this purpose. The name, Jared, means "to descend." The children of these forbidden unions were giants. This is the origin of the stores of giants which have come down to us in folklore. Moreover, the Book of Enoch speaks of the secrets, powers and practices, taught to men by the angels, and resulted in violence and sin. Peter was making reference to this irruption of angels in the time of Noah prior to the flood, and the consequences, when he said: "For if God spared not the angels that sinned..." [63] Jude also refers to this time when he Speaks of: "And the angels which kept not their first estate..." [64]



It matters not if men will believe it or not, the Bible teaches that demons do exist. It declares they are disembodied spirits and the evidence points to the fact that they are the spirits of those antediluvian whose mothers were mortal but whose fathers were immortal, whose bodies were destroyed in the Deluge (flood) in the days of Noah. If this is true, it accounts for the restlessness of these disembodied spirits seeking to be clothed in another earthly body.

### **Question: God Said He Would Use Stinging Insects to Help His People. When Were They Used by Him in Modern Times.**

**Answer:** In the course of Joshua's farewell address he referred to Hornets being used of God to drive out two of the Amorite Kings and against whom Israel did not have to use sword or bow. And which were also prophesied of in Exodus: "And I will send hornets (stinging insects) before thee..." [65]; "...I sent the hornet before you, which drove them out from before you, even the two kings of the Amorites; but not with thy sword, nor with thy bow." [66]

Hornets are stinging insects and we have a most interesting record in modern times of such (stinging) insects being used of God for the purpose of enabling Israel (America) to come into the possession of one of the great waterways of the earth.

It is well known that God promised that the seed of Abraham would possess the gateways, or waterways, of the earth. These were promised them as a part of their inheritance. One of the great gateways (waterways) of the world is the Panama Canal; France commenced the construction of this waterway. Although the building of the canal was condemned by the Church of Rome, the French would have continued their work of digging the canal and would probably have completed its construction except for a scourge of malaria, which caused the death of thousands. As a result the work ceased and the United States (Israel) was given the construction rights to the canal.

So, we can clearly see that the Lord used a stinging insect to drive out a nation so that they might not come into the possession of a waterway that would be a gateway between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. This is one of the principal gateways of the world and was reserved by God for His People Israel (America).

And it would still be an American (Israel) possession were it not for traitorous leaders under the control of Christ's Enemies: The Jews! It was later discovered that malaria was the result of the sting from a Malaria-Bearing Mosquito (a stinging insect), but this discovery did not become known until the French had abandoned their operations. Then Israel (America) marched in, conquered the insect (God was through with them and it was not His purpose to use them against His People) and completed the construction of the canal, which is today still one of the major waterways between two oceans.

### **Question: Were There Israelites in North America before Columbus?**

**Answer:** Yes North America was inhabited by Israelites 2000 years or more before 1492: There are archeological discoveries that have been made which show a strong correlation to the Bible. For when people think of Israel in the Bible they assume that all the events which happened to Israel did so in the little country known as Palestine; today it is called Israel. And therefore the Israelites could not have been very important in the ancient world.

However, Daniel told us that knowledge would increase in the latter days: "But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased." [67] Also, Daniel tells us that many things will be kept secret until the latter days: "And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end." [68]

Many of these recent archeological discoveries combined with secular and Biblical history give us a shockingly different perspective of the ancient world in general and ancient Israel in particular.

We will attempt to show you evidence which will prove ancient Israel was an empire. It had a homeland in Palestine, and a far-flung empire much the same as Britain did until just a few decades ago. Britain once ruled over a far-flung empire from a small homeland, located in the British Isles. In the years from about 1050-850 B.C. Israel was the dominant power of the world with an empire that rivaled and perhaps exceeded that of the Caesars. The empire included areas of the world now inhabited by the Israelite people and that included portions of North America. We full well understand this is a bold statement, but the evidence will follow. In this study we will examine the real extent of Israel's power and empire in the ancient world; the Israelite presence in North America with considerable specifics.

The impact of the drought of Elijah's day on the weakening of Israel and the rise of Cartage, which we will show was an Israelite colony. Cartage continued Israel's presence in the New World, very possibly even during Christ's lifetime here on earth. The time of Israel's greatness really began with King David and its rise to empire status.

This happened in about the year 1050 B.C. 2 Samuel 8 discusses David's defeat of the Philistines, Moab, Amalek, Edom, and the Syrians for example lost more than 80,000 men in just three battles [69]. That is more men than the United States lost in the 14 years of the Vietnam War. To give you a perspective of the ferocity of the battles.

1 Chronicles 21 shows that David could mobilize over 12 million men. With an army of that size you are not insignificant, not even in this age, this day and time. In 1 Chronicles 18:3 it states the border of his dominion went to the Euphrates River which bordered the area of Assyria and Babylon; or Mesopotamia who viewed David as an upstart rival.

The Phoenicians were the city states of Tyre and Sidon, and had a far flung empire on land and sea. They were the best sailors in the ancient world at



that time, and they saw the rise of David and Israel and made an alliance with them. They were a common race of Semitic people; they also had a common language.

There were only dialectic differences between Hebrew and the Phoenician tongue. 1 Kings 17:9-16 relates where Elijah met with a Phoenician or Zidonan widow, and they had immediate discourse, with no difficulty at all in communication. King Hiram the king of Tyre made David a palace and they became very close allies as 1 King 5:1 shows.

The Israelite Phoenician alliance was an ancient super power, with all twelve tribes of Israel united they sat astride the area where three continents met; they had the world's greatest navy in the Phoenicians combined with David's one and one-half million man army. And David was not the least bit reluctant to use it.

They were challenged by Assyria and Mesopotamia, which is almost totally unknown by most and yet it is related in the Bible. There was a revolt in Ammon which is a pretext for war between many nations and the Israelites. It is discussed in 1 Chronicles 19 and 20 in some detail.

There were 32 thousands chariots from Mesopotamia alone [70] that came to fight David's army in this battle. There was also an unknown number of men from Mesopotamia and Syria which included a number of different people which fought with Ammon against Israel.

In verse 9 we can see it was a national effort with a number of different nations to destroy Israel as it states their kings came to watch the battle. "And the children of Ammon came out, and put the battle in array before the gate of the city: and the kings that were come were by themselves in the field." [71]

So, we can clearly see, this was not just a mercenary effort, this was a matter of national commitment against Israel. Israel won the first round and also the second which left them with no one in the area to challenge them.

If you will look at Psalm 83, which was likely written by David at this time where he lists many nations that come to help the children of Lot, which also included Ammon to destroy Israel from off the face of the earth. "Keep not thou silence, O God: hold not thy peace, and be not still, O God. For, lo, thine enemies make a tumult: and they that hate thee have lifted up the head. They have taken crafty counsel against thy people, and consulted against thy hidden ones.

They have said, Come, and let us cut them off from being a nation; that the name of Israel may be no more in remembrance. For they have consulted together with one consent: they are confederate against thee: The tabernacles of Edom, and the Ishmaelites; of Moab, and the Hagarenes; Gebal, and Ammon, and Amalek; the Philistines with the inhabitants of Tyre; Assur also is joined with them: they have holpen the children of Lot. Selah. Do unto them as unto the Midianites; as to Sisera, as to Jabin, at the brook of Kison: Which perished at Endor: they became as dung for the earth. Make their nobles like Oreb, and like Zeeb: yea, all their princes as Zebah, and as Zalmunna: Who said, Let us take to ourselves the houses of God in possession.

O my God, make them like a wheel; as the stubble before the wind. As the fire burneth a wood, and as the flame setteth the mountains on fire; So persecute them with thy tempest, and make them afraid with thy storm. Fill their faces with shame; that they may seek thy name, O Lord. Let them be confounded and troubled for ever; yea, let them be put to shame, and perish: That men may know that thou, whose name alone is **Jehovah**, art the most high over all the earth." [72]

Secular history has recorded that Assyria's Empire went into eclipse or confusion, some encyclopaedias call it, between 1100-900 B.C. Halley's Bible Handbook comments on it also, and states that ancient Israel was much stronger than Assyria, Babylon or Egypt. This is the same period as Israel's golden age under David and Solomon. And is glossed over in almost all historical texts, if they even cover it at all.

What happened to Assyria? It was defeated badly in a war against Israel's army, as we learn from 1 Chronicles and Psalm 83. The texts of ancient

history will not tell you this nor will it give great credibility as the Bible is the Word of God.

Assyria and other nations had provoked Ammon to start this war, and this will give you a little indication of how large an area that David ruled. In Psalm 83 he named the nations that became a part of this war, which included Assyria and in all likelihood became a vassal state to David. It included the Ishmaelites, which included the Arabian Peninsula and people we don't know where they lived in the east, so we really don't know how large an area David actually ruled. But he did rule from Egypt to somewhere about the middle of the modern nation of Iran. Either directly or through vassal states as a result of that war. But Israel was the dominant super power of the ancient world at this time.

Is there evidence of an Israelite Empire? The answer is Yes! But the secular historians will rarely call it an Israelite Empire, they will call it a Phoenician Empire. Most people who do not realize the difference between Judah and Israel balk at this major role for Israel because they think the Jews were the Israelites and the Jews have always been few in number, but they don't realize that the men from Judah were only a small part of David's army at this time. It is true that David was of the tribe of Judah but he, also, had eleven other tribes to provide manpower.

The Phoenician Empire is credited by historians as being dominant in the Mediterranean Sea; as being present in substantial numbers in the British Isles, the West Coast of Europe and Africa in the period of about 1100-800 B.C. and they are not at all bashful in calling it a Phoenician Empire.

This coincides with the exact time that Assyria was put down and the Bible tells us that David had defeated the Assyrians. It also coincides with Israel's greatness and the allegiance of the Phoenician city Israelites; show Phoenicia took pains to join with them because they did not wish to be their enemy. 1 Chronicles 22 relates that David accumulated for the Temple of God iron and brass beyond calculation. [73]

Warner Keller in his book "The Bible is History" states: "Israel was using the Bessemer system of smelting, which was not re-discovered until

recently in the modern era—Essian Gebar was the Pittsburgh of ancient Palestine."

That nowhere else in the fertile crescent which includes Mesopotamia could such a large smelting facility be found. We see by this that Israel was not just an agriculture only nation but they were also the industrial power house of the ancient world.

Dr. Berry Fells book "Bronze Age America" cites evidence that 2 billions of copper ore was taken from mines near Lake Superior in North America, in roughly 2000-1000 B.C. The dates include the time of David's reign, at the tail end of it, as the ore apparently ran out for they have no evidence that it was mined after that.

It could be that the Israelites simply worked the mines to death, or to where they could not be mined economically at that point. Which Fell states that this New World copper mine output there is no evidence what became of it. There is no evidence it was used in this hemisphere at all. And they have no idea where the copper came from which was smelted in Palestine during this time.

Putting this evidence together and one comes up with the assumption that this copper was shipped from North America to Palestine by boat and was used by Israel in its huge smelting facilities in Palestine. The Phoenician/Israelite presence in America has abundantly shown to be real. At this point, we must, in all fairness, present just one of the many stories which abound which make reference to our Israel ancestors coming to America thousands of years Before Columbus.

The following is taken from an article in National Geographic, December 1977: "The New Word: Who, from the Old first touched its shore? Historians held for centuries that it was Christopher Columbus. By current consensus, it was Norse voyagers of a thousand years ago. But perhaps it was a group of shadowy, yet very real, Irish seafaring monks who predated even the Vikings by more than four centuries. In the great pantheon of New World explorers no name is more intriguing, or more clouded in controversy, than that of Ireland's St. Brendan.

His legend, today more tantalizing than ever, has persisted through the centuries in the form of a Christians imram, an Irish saga: Navigatio Sancti Brendani Abbatis, Voyage of Saint Brendan the Abbot. With 17 fellow monks, it relates, Brendan sailed to Terra Repromissionis Sanctorum, the land promised to the Saints, somewhere beyond the far reaches of the Western Atlantic. Was the Promised Land North America? Did St. Brendan actually reach it in the sixth century? Neither history nor archaeology offers proof." [74] The statement ("Neither history nor archaeology offers proof") is totally untrue, and I believe the publishers of National Geographic knew it at the time of the publication. Most of us have read (from reputable history books) of the adventures of Lief Eriksson and his party in the founding of Vinland circa A.D. 800-1400 in the area of the St. Lawrence River in the North-eastern United States and Canada. Although they predated the Columbus voyage by many centuries, were the expeditions of Lief Eriksson the first discovery of what is now known as the United States? There were Christians living in America over 100 years before Columbus arrived in the Caribbean. The official historians of this country have known this for many, many years. Yet, none of this is discussed as a national heritage. Why is this?

Those of us who are interested in finding petroglyphs, or ancient symbols and pictures engraved on stones, have wondered about the meaning of them. All we could do was wonder and speculate until the science of deciphering ancient and unknown languages was developed. The science is called Epigraphics and it has been developed into a rather sophisticated science. Symbols, for example, mean something, but what?

Epigraphics. Until a few years ago geologists told us that the numerous short and repetitive lines inscribed on rocks found in the Northeastern United States and Canada were simply scratches made from the movement of ice and rocks during the recent ice-age. Because of Epigraphics, we now know that it was a language and it has been deciphered.

The Celts. This language is that of the Celts from Ireland, Scotland, England, France and the Rhineland country of Germany. The language dates from long before Christ and was in use in Ireland and England at

the time of Celtic Druids. It is called Ogam script and has been found all over America, from the West Indies to Newfoundland and west into Oregon and British Columbia.

We know that Julius Caesar described the vessels that the Celts had built and used. In Book III of his *De Bello Gallico* he described these vessels against which his small, puny (by comparison), ships of the Roman fleet fought. He described them as being capable of sailing "upon the vast open sea." This is exactly what they did. It appears that there were many different expeditions and migrations by the Celts during the period of many centuries before Christ until circa 400-800 A.D. They came, not only just once to colonize, but they came and returned to Europe on a repetitive basis.

The Vikings. The Vikings were here in America when King Woden-lithi sailed the Atlantic seventeen centuries before Christ and entered the St. Lawrence River. He established a trading post at a site near where Toronto now stands. It became a religious and commercial center that is now known as Petroglyph Park at Peterborough, Canada. King Woden-lithi's home was in Norway.

He remained in Canada for five months, from April to September and traded his woven fabrics for copper ingots obtained from the European settlers. He called these people Wal, which is a word cognate with Wales and Welsh. He gave these Celts his religious beliefs, the ability to measure woven cloth and an astronomical observatory for measuring the Nordic calendar and for determining the dates of the pagan Yale and Ishtar festivals. Remember, this was seventeen centuries (1700-years) before Christ!

Ogam Script. The Celts were already here when King Woden-lithi arrived. What was their written language like? We have already shown that they wrote with the Ogam script which can be described simply as an alphabet, comprising fifteen consonants and five vowels, together with a few other signs representing double letters such as diphthongs. The letters are made by inscribing single parallel strokes placed in sets of one to five, in position above, across, or below a guide line.

The Languages. But what words were made from this Ogam alphabet? Here again the science of Epigraphy gives us the answer. We know that there is no language of any of the American Indians that is made up of the Greek language. And yet the ancient Celts in the area of the St. Lawrence River spoke a language that was directly derived from the Greek! As we shall see, the different Celts in America spoke yet other languages! The type of Greek that was spoken by the Celts of the area is known as Ptolemaic which means that it is a dialect of Greek that was spoken in Egypt, Palestine and the other countries in the area that Alexander conquered.

Alexander forced upon the area his idea of one-world government, one-world people, one-world religion and one-world language. It was this Ptolemaic dialect that Alexander forced upon the citizens of the area. The dialect was composed of Greek, Egyptian and Aramaic. This is why Jesus spoke Aramaic and Greek, instead of Hebrew. We will study the effect that Alexander had on Israel and Christianity in a future lesson.

The obvious question from the previous paragraph is, who were the Celts? Did the Celts from Iberia (The Spanish Peninsula) and the Rhineland go to Egypt and Palestine and learn the Greek spoken language at the time of Alexander or did the Israelites (Not Jews) learn the Greek and Aramaic when they were in Palestine and then go to the new world to escape the dictatorship of Alexander? Remember, Israel lost the knowledge of ancient Hebrew (not modern Yiddish) before and during the time of Alexander.

The language of the Celts who were already here in the St. Lawrence River Valley when King Woden-lithe arrived has since been lost. Why has the language disappeared? This is probably at least partly because through the subsequent years they intermixed with other peoples and in the process the language was lost.

It doesn't take much to lose a language. Notice the difference between American English and the English language spoken in England. But that doesn't account for the fact that a grace of people totally vanished from the continent. Some of the Ogam Script is with the Gaelic influence.

The Gaelic language came from the highlands of Scotland. In the New England area, artifacts such as grave headstones have been found, all with Ogam script in Gaelic script.[75] The Celts with the Gaelic dialect came from the highlands of Scotland. According to the Scottish Declaration of Independence written by Robert Bruce and his noblemen, the Scotland people came from ancient Israel through the Rhineland area of France and Germany and then through Iberia or Spain.

The Mariners from Tarshish. Tarshish was thy merchant by reason of the multitude of all kind of riches; with silver, iron, tin, and lead, they traded in thy fairs.[76] The Celts were well established in foreign trade.

In 1780, Ezra Stiles, who later became the president of Yale College, found and recorded a Tartessian inscription on a rock along the seashore near Mount Hope Bay, Rhode Island. The deeply cut inscription clearly shows the outline of a typical high-sterned ship from Tarshish. Under the outline of the ship are the words in Tartessian (Tarshish) Punic, "Mariners of Tarshish this rock proclaims." Near Union, New Hampshire, another Tartessian inscription was found with a similar Tarshish ship hull and the words, "Voyagers from Tarshish this stone proclaims."

On Mohegan Island, off the coast of Maine, is, in Ogam script in Gaelic dialect, an inscription showing that the Celts traded with the traders from Tarshish. It is obvious that the mariners from Tarshish were not residents of the area as were the Celts. They were trading with the Celts for their furs and raw materials from the mining done by the Celts.

Thus, there was a lively trade being conducted between the Japhetic sons of Tarshish [77] and the Celtic sons of Shem. Some of the trading was done with goods in exchange for the furs and metals of the Celts. But there was also an exchange for coins. It seems that modern historians won't believe the facts of history such as the Ogam inscriptions. They only like to see the money! Well, there is that, too!

Coins. From about the fourth century B.C. the ancient mariner traders brought coins in addition to goods. In the year 1787, Pastor Thaddeus Madson Harris came upon a group of men working on a road known as the Cambridge-Malden road (now Route 16) in Massachusetts. The



workers had uncovered a flat stone underneath the surface. Under the stone was a cache of ancient coins, nearly two quarts of them. The coins were square pieces made of a copper-silver alloy. Each coin was stamped on both sides with an unknown script.

Pastor Harris recorded the incident in a letter to John Quincy Adams. The inscriptions were taken to the Harvard Library for translation but with no success. The letter was then buried in the archives for nearly two hundred years until James Whittall, of the Early Sites Research Society, re-discovered the letter with the inscriptions and researched them with the American Numismatic Society and with Epigraphic scientists. The inscriptions proved to be that of Kufic origin which is a form of Arabic. Undoubtedly, one of the trading mariners brought the coins to America to purchase the Celtic goods which were for sale.

After the newly designed steel plow was invented by Charles Newbold in 1797, the earth could be turned over to a much greater depth. The furrow that the plow made opened up the soil and there, by the thousands, were found Roman coins! In days of early America, the extensive study of Latin and Roman history was required for a college degree.

Thus, the people of America readily knew that Europeans came to America and lived in America much earlier than Christopher Columbus. But later, from American history books, our school children were taught the Columbus mystique and they were taught that the world was considered flat by all educated people until Columbus discovered America! All of those Roman coins that were discovered were ignored and it has remained that way until very recently. As we continue our studies, we will realize why the truth was buried.

In 1961, Frederick J. Pohl raised the nagging question of the Roman coins in his book *Atlantic Crossings Before Columbus*. He describes notable finds of Roman coins in the United States. Other scientists have carried on the task of proving the European travels to this continent long before Columbus.

One of the notable men in this field is Professor Cyclone Covey of Wake Forest University. Much will be discussed about his investigations later in this lesson. Roman coins are not the only money found in America. Carthaginian, Celto-Iberian, Greek, Libyan and Norse coins have been found in locations all over the United States. Near Castle Gardens, Wyoming a petroglyph was found, written in Celto-Gaelic, describing the location of what would be the description of a bank.

Yes, the petroglyph says that this was the first money-changing location to reach the area and that the bank operated with no usury! Undoubtedly, this was a location for exchanging the value of one coin for another for the purpose of trading and travelling.

The petroglyph written in Celto-Gaelic undoubtedly means that the Celts were located in Wyoming and the fact that they operated in Wyoming and the fact that they operated with no usury is significant. We will shortly discuss the type of law the Celts exercised.

From 400 B.C. to 1100 A.D., the Western world realized six maritime powers. They all came out of the Mediterranean area except for the last one. They are, in order of their appearance, (1) the Carthaginians of Tunisia; (2) the Greeks and Libyans of North Africa; (3) the Romans; (4) the Byzantine Greeks who succeeded Rome; (5) the Islamic powers of North Africa and Asia; and (6) the Norse sea-rovers.

Although the Celts were never realized as a maritime power, since they were a people scattered over many countries, their ocean-going ships were among the best. These ships were huge in comparison to the Roman ships. They were two thousand tons in capacity as compared to about four hundred tons of the average Roman ship.

The ships that the uncle of Jesus, Joseph of Aramathea, used to haul lead and tin from the Glastonbury area of England for sale to the Romans were Celtic in design and operation. Again, Julius Caesar spoke very highly of the sea-going prowess of the Celts and their ships. Throughout this period, each of these maritime powers sent ships all over the high seas and to America.

But it was the Libyans who transcended all of the others in the span of their voyage. A Libyan, named Eratosthenes of Cyrene, accurately calculated the earth's circumference. He reasoned that the earth's oceans had to be continuous and consequently a ship could sail around the world in either direction and return to the starting point. The date was approximately 239 B.C.!

Eratosthenes developed the system of the meridian circles of the map of the globe. The meridian circles are simply the points on the globe where the SUN is directly overhead at noon at the local time. He set these meridian circles in a grid in such a way that a mariner could accurately locate his position. He drew the primary meridian circle to pass through Alexandria. The Libyans then set sail in their ocean-going vessels to prove that Eratosthenes was right. Their ships were equipped with magnetic compasses. Their compass consisted of a ceramic bowl with the compass points engraved around the edge. A lodestone (a strongly magnetic variety of the mineral magnetite) was floated on the water in the bowl.

Sometimes, a magnetized iron strip was suspended in the bowl. They also had a device for navigation that was the forerunner of the modern sextant. The Libyans traveled eastward, through the Suez Canal that King Darius had built, then sailed down the Red Sea, and then around the tip of India, through the Indonesian straits and then into the Pacific Ocean. They arrived on the West Coast of America, disembarked and travelled inland to Nevada. These ancient Libyans settled in the arid Nevada country because it was very similar to their own home country.

In various locations in Nevada are petroglyphs, written in Aramaic-Libyan and Celto-Gaelic which reflect their mariner skills. There is a map of North America, showing the outline of both coasts from the Hudson Bay country of Canada to Panama in the South. It was obviously taken from one of their meridian circle navigation charts that Eratosthenes developed.

In addition, examples of their mathematics is displayed along with oceanography. Their alphabet was written in stone for us to see. Astronomy as a science is displayed. Remember, before the fall of the

Roman Empire, the Center of Western Civilization rested along the shores of the Mediterranean Sea.

The modern day epigraphic scientists are puzzled as to what happened to all of these people, from the Celts, to the Carthaginians, to the Libyans and all the other original settlers who have come to this land. Certainly educated people in the sciences and mathematics lived here many years ago, that is now obvious. But when the American colonists arrived, the natives had no written language nor any knowledge of higher education.

For example, the Paiute and Shoshone tribesmen of Nevada were asked where all of the petroglyphs we now know to have been scribed by the Libyans came from, they could tell the archaeologists and epigraphists nothing except that neither they nor their forebears had cut them. However, some of the methods and style of living that were taught by these ancient settlers have come down through the centuries by the indigenous peoples who were here and then remained after the mysterious disappearance. For example, in the modern, Libyan North African region there are two Distinct ecological groups.

1). The first is the modern Berber who is of lighter skin with obvious and European features with many having blond hair and blue eyes. He prefers to live in the mountainous regions where there is more water and better soil. He is an agriculturist and he builds his home pueblo style out of sun-dried mud which he calls in Arabic attobi which in America is called adobe.

Their buildings are multi-level with the floors and ceilings strengthened with wooden beams which project beyond the outer walls. His dress code calls for the women not to wear the face veil but to tattoo their chins. The men have the custom to cover their heads and faces with a scarf-like cloth, showing only their eyes to strangers. Even today, these modern Berbers still speak the Berber language which came to them from their Celto-Iberian background.

2). The second ecological group is the Arabs. They are nomadic, moving their herds from place to place in the lowlands. They live in tents. The

women cover their heads with veils and are not tattooed. The men do not veil the face. Their language is Arabic.

In the Peabody Museum of Harvard University are ancient bowls made by these Libyan mariners who built their temporary colonies in the Southwestern United States.

The bowls very clearly show a man and woman painted on the sides of each. The women have no veil but have their chins tattooed. The men have the Berber type of scarf covering their faces with only the eyes showing! Beyond a doubt, these people were a part of the Libyan expeditions into the Western United States. They, too, suddenly disappeared in the 10th to 12th century A.D., after having been here from about 500 B.C. All of these people abandoned their towns and simply vanished.

The ancient Berbers were of Celto-Iberian origin. They spoke a Gaelic Celto-Iberian language. When we again return to the Scottish Declaration of Independence and read that they traveled through Iberia (The Spanish Peninsula) on their way to Scotland and Ireland, it would account for the Celto-Iberian-Gaelic dialect. It is in this language that the great majority of the petroglyphs are written.

It is obvious that the Libyan Berbers associated with the Celts of the Eastern and Northern United States during the apex of their civilization here. It is apparent that they had a flourishing trade with their home countries of Europe.

Not only did they travel to and from Europe on occasion in their own ships, they conducted commerce with the traders from Tarshish and Cartage. Just as the Celts in the Glastonbury and Avalon areas of England mined for tin and lead and shipped the finished metal to Rome in Joseph of Arimathea's ships, the same Celts conducted mining operations in America and either sold or traded their metal with Europe. But it all vanished around the end of the first millennium A.D.

Christianity and the American Celts. When the first Celts arrived in America, they were as pagan as their brothers in Europe. Many of the

earlier inscriptions in America depicted Baal worship and classical Phallic worship. Then, all of sudden, there came the appearance of Christian inscriptions.

In fact, whenever it was possible, the later Christian inscriptions were inscribed over the top of the earlier pagan writing. This was obvious to the epigraphic scientists because the later inscriptions were cut deeper and partially obliterated the earlier work. In Cripple Creek, Colorado there is a memorial in Greek that states, "Herein is the last resting place of Palladis (a priest), the servant of God." At Oak Island, Nova Scotia is found an inscription in Libyan dialect of the North African Coptic Church, which states, "To escape contagion of plague and winter hardships, he is to pray for an end or mitigation, the arif: The people will perish in misery if they forget the Lord, alas.[78]

Wherever Christianity has gone, the Laws of God have been adapted into the legal system of the community. The Christian Celts of Iberia, Ireland, Scotland as well as the Christian Celts of America had a legal system that reflected the teachings of the Christian Bible. The system was called the Tanistry which means the administration of law by deputies of the king.

The system as it is preserved from ancient times is rather lengthy so here are just a few examples to show the influence of the Christian Bible:

- 1). "In the obscurity of the mists of olden time a desire would arise to replace armed combat by arbitration.[79]
- 2). And it would seem a desirable thing that land boundaries should be fixed without recourse to moats.[80]
- 3). Henceforth cases involving wrongdoing are to be made over to the wisest men.[81]
- 4). Any case is to be brought to judgment without delay.
- 5). Henceforth in any case involving false utterances let amends be paid in compensation for the harm.[82]

6). Henceforth if a complainant be merciful, let the judges also be merciful. [83]

7). If a malicious man utter lying words that another declares to be slanderous, to the measure of his tongue-loose recklessness shall he transport heavy burdens for the other man.[84]

8). The common people may eat corn, together with game bird but they may not hunt bears. They may kill stags, goats and red deer." [85]

There is much more to the Tanistry but this gives you information that the early Celts became Christian and this was imparted to those Celts living in the United States long before Columbus "discovered" America.

The Norsemen. The Columbus mystique has been so impressed on the American people that we are blinded to facts. Such again is the case of the colonists from Norway.

When Thormod Torfason wrote his authenticated works titled *Historia Vinlandae Antiquae* in 1705, very few historians and other scholars knew anything of the many trips to America by the Norse mariners and colonists.

For over two more centuries, nearly everyone continued to disbelieve Torfason's studies. The American's minds were made up, don't confuse us with facts! We will understand why we have been misled by the conclusion of the next lesson in history.

On May 24, 1934, a mining prospector named James Edward Dodd was blasting in the Great Lakes region of Canada and his dynamite uncovered a sword and a shield. These artifacts were taken to the royal Ontario Museum and they were accurately dated to the first quarter of the eleventh century, about 1025 A.D.

It was at this time that Leif Eriksson began his first ventures to the land that he called Vinland. The name itself was given to the St. Lawrence

River area because of the abundance of wild grapes that the Norsemen found to make a very good grade of wine. Because of the find of the sword and shield, along with much other evidence, we Americans began to believe that the Norsemen did, indeed, predate Columbus' discovery.

In the 1930's, we began to learn about the tremendous amount of European travel and commerce predating Eriksson by many centuries. Then in 1940, we were re-convinced that Eriksson didn't exist and that there was absolutely nobody who proceeded Columbus.

Admiral Samuel Eliot Morison was an author who appeared to be "puffed" by the establishment. His style of writing was light and airy and he was very capable of mixing legends in with archaeological and historical facts in such a way that it became easy to question the technical analysis.

In 1940, from his Harvard position, he was adamant in his position that Columbus was the first and in 1942 he wrote Admiral of the Ocean Sea: A Life of Christopher Columbus to prove his point. By 1961 the Royal Ontario Museum was obliged to re-evaluate their analysis of the sword and shield by stating that it "was not possible to authenticate the story of the alleged discovery."

In Admiral Morison's book *The European Discovery of America*, he refutes the Vinland story by stating that nearly all of the seacoast towns from Newfoundland to the Virginia Capes boast in their histories that Lief Eriksson was there. But he says that there have been no artifacts to prove his presence. He states that the Newport stone tower which is cherished as the first Christian Church in America is a fake and that it was built around 1675 by a colonial governor of Rhode Island.

Yet, in 1946 an authenticated inscription was found on one of the rocks of the tower. The inscription is in Nordic Runes and simply declares the lower to be the "cathedral church" and the "Bishop's Seat." The Newport Tower is a part of the church that the Norsemen built in the early 1300's. To further authenticate this, the Italian explorer Giovanni de Verrazano in 1524 sailed up the East coast of the United States from Florida to Labrador.



He rediscovered Long Island Sound and the Hudson River. He drew a map, which is officially shown in the Archives, of the Narragansett coast and in his writings he described the stone' built "Norman Villa." He went ashore and found friendly Indians who knew nothing of the building of the villa. Verrazano recognized it to be Norse because of the style of architecture and other evidence.

An English document (of the period of the Pilgrims) proposed a settlement in Rhode Island. The document gave the location of the Norman Tower as the place where the settlement should be made. In Rhode Island today, the local name for the tower is often given as "Governor Arnold's Mill," because the first governor made use of the tower as a flour mill. Here is an example of how a historian can take partial facts, along with legend, and make it fit the "politically correct thing to say."

There is evidence now being discovered that shows the Norsemen to have sailed South, along the Eastern seashore, into the Gulf of Mexico and then up the Mississippi River.

Not only have Viking Battle Axes been found but more inscriptions to prove their presence. The Heavener runestone inscription in the Oklahoma State Park on Poteau Mountain has been definitely judged to be Nordic script of the Viking Age of not later than 1350 A.D. Viking inscriptions have also been found in Colorado. No longer can we deny the presence of the Norsemen in America several hundred years before Columbus.

We have left for last what is perhaps the most striking evidence of pre-Columbus Europeans in America.

In the Southwestern part of the United States the climate is generally arid or semi-arid and the soil is more alkaline. As a result of these conditions artifacts, including human remains, are left intact for a very long time.

There is mounting evidence that Europeans, in significant numbers, colonized a portion of the Southwestern United States during the period from approximately 700 A.D. until about 1300 A.D.

It is very significant that all of the colonies in North America, including this one under discussion, appeared to simply vanish within an approximate 100 year time frame. We may never know the exact reasons and there could have been several. We know that the Europeans transmitted diseases that were specific to Europe to the indigenous natives who were vulnerable to them.

Conversely, the natives gave the Europeans specific diseases to which they were vulnerable, such as some of the social diseases. Or, there could have very easily been a universal uprising and this is even probable. Whatever the reasons were, we must believe that the ventures did not please God. There had to be things that were done that were seriously breaking some of His Laws.

About 700 A.D. there appeared in the area of West Texas, New Mexico, Colorado, Arizona and Nevada, a literal empire apparently made up of a city-state system.

The empire was Christian and they had succeeding kings. The people came from the British Isles, Gaul (France), Germany, Rome and apparently North Africa.

Undoubtedly, the North Africans were the Berbers who had already arrived from Libya and had previously taught the natives to build the pueblo style structures and to irrigate for farming. Some of the ancient ruins that were very skilfully built of stone masonry that are dotted over the Southwest are probably associated with the empire. Some of these ancient ruins have been rebuilt with later construction over the top of the original.

The modern Amerindian knows nothing about the builders of these ancient cities. However, they have given a name to these earlier inhabitants. They call them the Hohokam, which means "Those who have gone" or "The old ones." After the Spaniards occupied Mexico in the early 1500's, they headed north to investigate the persistent stories of the fabulously wealthy "Seven Cities of Cibola."

Of course they never found them because the empire had simply vanished a couple of hundred years earlier. Even in 1300 A.D. the empire had already waned in its importance as a kingdom so there wasn't much left.

In New Mexico, south of Albuquerque and west of Los Lunas about 14 miles, is a huge Basalt (volcanic) boulder. The rock is nestled in a small draw on the side of a group of hills which overlooks the stream called Rio Puerco. The front side, protruding from the soil, is very flat and provides a perfect place for an inscription. On this boulder, inscribed in old Hebrew with a Greek influence, is the Decalog or The Ten Commandments! As early as 1850, when New Mexico became a territory, people knew of the inscription but it was not until a century later when Professor Robert Pfeiffer of Harvard University, an authority on the Old Testament, determined it to be The Ten Commandments. The inscription was then re-authenticated as being The Ten Commandments by Dr. Barry Fell, the country's foremost epigraphic scientist.

The most revealing discoveries of this ancient kingdom came from the Tucson, Arizona area. Along the Santa Cruz River, in the vicinity of Tucson, beneath six or more feet of undisturbed cliché soil, were found many artefacts that unquestionably prove that European people lived in the area. Cliché soil is made up of crusted calcium carbonate mixed with ordinary dirt. Through many years, water mixes with the combination and turns it into a very hard, concrete like, soil. After it is once formed, if it is then removed, the soil never returns to the original configuration. Thus, when the artefacts were found, it is certain that they are of ancient origin and not a recent fraud.

The artefacts included lead swords, spears, a patriarchal monstrance or shrine used in the religious ceremonies, and eight heavy crosses. All of the artefacts were made of moulded lead which was mined in the area. This is known because some of the moulds were also found. Each of the crosses was actually two thin lead crosses which were riveted together with lead rivets.

When the two halves were separated, it was found that the inner sides were protected with wax in order to preserve the inscriptions which were on the inside parts. It became obvious that the crosses were made for the purpose of a permanent recording of events that were taking place at the time. The swords were not to be used for combat. They were made of lead and also contained inscriptions. They were for ceremonies of some sort. The inscriptions contained words in Hebrew, Latin and Greek. Following are some of the translations: On one of the crosses, at the top are the words "In Memoriam."

On the cross arm at the left is a profile of a head with the words "Britain, Albion, Jacob." In the centre is another head profile with the words "Romans, Actim, Theodore." On the right is another head profile with the words "Gaul, Seine, Israel." On the vertical beam of the lead cross is this inscription. "Counsels of great cities together with seven hundred soldiers A.D. 800, Jan. 1." "We are borne over the sea to Calalus, an unknown land where Toltezus Silvanus ruled far and wide over a people. Theodore transferred his troops to the foot of the city Rhoda and more than seven hundred were captured. No gold is taken away. Theodore, a man of great courage, rules for fourteen years. Jacob rules for six. With the help of God, nothing has to be feared. In the name of Israel, OL."

The inscriptions on these artifacts is a sort of history of one of the city-states of the European migration to this country. The first inscription reveals that Theodore was the ruling king over the city-state of Rhoda. The Toltecs (which history shows existed in Mexico in this time frame) were under Chief Toltezus Silvanus who ruled over a very large area and people.

Theodore was a Roman and he moved his troops to the foot or outskirts of the city Rhoda for defense against the Toltecs. Apparently the troops could not hold against the Toltecs and 700 troops were captured but the Toltecs did not take any gold. Theodore must have been killed in that battle. The second cross has the following inscription which, of course, has been translated from the Latin and Greek. "Jacob renews the city. With God's help Jacob rules with mighty hand in the manner of his ancestors. Sing to the Lord. May his fame live forever. OL."

Jacob a native of Britain and he succeeded Theodore for six years while counterattacking the enemy. He personally fought at the front lines and it appears that he died in battle. The third cross yielded this inscription. "From the egg (the beginning) A.D. 700 to A.D. 900. Nothing but the cross. While the war was raging, Israel died. Pray for the soul of Israel. May the earth lie light on thee. He adds glory to ancestral glory. Israel, defender of the faith. Israel reigns sixty-seven years."

Israel I was born on the Seine River in France and must have been just a boy when he assumed the throne in 785. These dates are known because of other inscriptions but there are too many of them to include here. The year 790 under Israel I's reign was important because of his decisive victory over the Toltecs. He subjugated them to be under his rule. On January 1, 800 A.D. he presided over a council of allied city-states. Because of the present peace, he turned his attention to the priesthood.

The next inscription. "Israel II rules for six. Israel III was twenty-six years old when he began to rule. Internecine war. To conquer or die. He flourishes in ancestral honor day by day."

The next inscription. "A.D. 880. Israel III, for liberating the Toltecs, was banished. He was first to break the custom. The earth shook. Fear overwhelmed the hearts of men in the third year after he had fled. They betook themselves into the city and kept themselves within their walls. A dead man thou shall neither bury nor burn in the city. Before the city a plain was extending. Hills rung the city. It is a hundred years since Jacob was king. Jacob stationed himself in the front line. He anticipated everything. He fought much himself. Often smote the enemy. Israel turned his attention to the appointment of priests. We have life, a people widely ruling. OL."

The next inscription. "A.D. 895. An unknown land. Would that I might accomplish my task to serve the king. It is uncertain how long life will continue. There are many things which can be said while the war rages. Three thousand were killed. The leader with his principal men are captured. Nothing but peace was sought. God ordains all things. OL."

The author of the book Calalus is a history professor at Wake Forest University. He mistakenly describes the people of Rhoda as Roman Jews. This is undoubtedly because of the names of the individuals. But again, Dr. Berry Fell, the nation's foremost expert epigraphist shows them to be Christians From England, France, Rome and North Africa. The crosses would have been unacceptable if they were Jews.

The use of the chronological term A.D., which was started by Dionesius in 532 A.D., would certainly have been unacceptable to the Jews. To this day they term the present chronological time the "Christian Era" instead of A.D. The Toltecs went on to totally destroy these people. Why didn't these European Christians survive? Why did all of the other Europeans mysteriously vanish with the last of them having been gone since the 1300's? It was for several reasons, all of which are distasteful to God for His Celto-Saxon people. The Apostle Paul summed it all up when he said: "Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you." [86]

For one thing, they had to interbreed themselves out of existence, at least in part. They also apparently came for the riches of gold and silver. In nearly all cases, there appears to be mining as a principle purpose for being here. They also apparently tried to subdue the native population. In other words, use them as slave or cheap labour.

If we will look back into history, all of the great civilizations of the Celto-Saxons fell when they brought in cheap labour or slaves and then mixed with them. The process destroys both cultures. If we will but look at our own history we will see a lesson. That part of our culture that came from the Pilgrims and then moved westward as the needs required used their own labour. They had large families and the children worked in their enterprises, be it farming or a shop in town.

They remained separated from other peoples and they were told in their churches that gold would be used for street paving in the future! As long as our forefathers stayed separate, feared God, loved their neighbour as themselves and did not love mammon more than their gifts from God,

they were a peculiar people to Him. Look around us in modern America and what we see speaks for itself. But it is not too late. It is not too late. Not yet. [87]

Now back to where we left off in our story, as related in National Geographic. "Early map makers and explorers gave credence to the legend. Place-names from the Navigation appear on later charts, and early navigators sought vainly for 'St. Brendan's Isle.' Fact or fantasy, the Navigation had incalculable impact on the great European voyages of discovery, including that of Columbus. According to the legend, St. Brendan and his fellow monks set sail from Ireland in a leather-hulled curragh; this same type of boat, now covered with tarred canvas, is still used by Irish fishermen. The voyage lasted seven years and introduced the monks to such wonders as demons who hurled fire at them, a floating crystal column, and a sea creature as great as an island. Scholars wonder today: Mighty they have been volcanic eruptions.—an iceberg.—a whale? Finally, Brendan and his shipmates reached the Promised Land, a huge, lush island divided by a mighty river.

Soon afterward they sailed home to Ireland, where Brendan died. There the legend of St. Brendan ends, to be given new vitality in the 1970's by a real-life sequel. In the following article, British author and explorer Timothy Severin recounts his epic Atlantic crossing aboard a leather boat. In proving that such a long-ago voyage could have been made, Tim Severin and his crew have brought one of history's most intriguing takes a giant step closer to the realm of possibility. -- The Editor." [88]

When David died as the world emperor, he was ruling over the Mediterranean Sea in conjunction with the Phoenicians; he ruled over conquered territory from Egypt somewhere in the interior of Asia. And Israelites were present in Britain and America. During the reign of King Solomon he inherited a huge domain, great power and he devoted himself to wisdom and good rule during the first part of his reign. 1 Kings 4:20-25 related that Israel dwelt safely all the days of Solomon, indeed, how could they not, there was no one left in that area to challenge them.

1 Kings 5:12 show King Hiram and the Phoenicians were allied to Israel. "And the Lord gave Solomon wisdom, as he promised him: and there was peace between Hiram and Solomon; and they two made a league together." 1 Kings 4:31-34 makes some statements which the world's historians hate. It states that Solomon' wisdom was known to all the nations of the earth. "For he was wiser than all men; than Ethan the Ezrahite, and Heman, and Chalcol, and Darda, the sons of Mahol: and his fame was in all nations round about. And he spake three thousand proverbs: and his songs were a thousand and five. And he spake of trees, from the cedar tree that is in Lebanon even unto the hyssop that springeth out of the wall: he spake also of beasts, and of fowl, and of creeping things, and of fishes. And there came of all people to hear the wisdom of Solomon, from all kings of the earth, which had heard of his wisdom."

2 Chronicles states all the kings of the earth sought the presence of Solomon and brought their tributes year by year and presents to hear his wisdom. "And all the drinking vessels of king Solomon were of gold, and all the vessels of the house of the forest of Lebanon were of pure gold: none were of silver; it was not any thing accounted of in the days of Solomon. For the king's ships went to Tarshish with the servants of Hiram: every three years once came the ships of Tarshish bringing gold, and silver, ivory, and apes, and peacocks. And king Solomon passed all the kings of the earth in riches and wisdom. And all the kings of the earth sought the presence of Solomon, to hear his wisdom, that God had put in his heart." [89]

Is this just some imagination exaggeration of some Hebrew writer? He couldn't actually mean it could he? Well 2 Chronicles 8, 18:9-10 and 1 Kings 9 also show that Israel and Phoenicia joined their navies into one navy, and it mentions they mingled the crews on the same ship.

Berry Falls book "America B.C." has some remarkable revelations of the real extent of just how much the Israelites and the Phoenician alliance was in the area which consists of the United States today. He states in his book "America B.C." that the Phoenicians had a regular port of call of the coast of Maine. Where an old inscription was found which he translates: "Ships of Phoenicia cargo platform."



Fell states: "It is obvious that the flat topped island would not have been set aside for the loading and unloading of Phoenician ships were they not regular visitors to America, with a predictable time table of ports of arrival and departure and expected dates."

He adds: "These inscriptions suggest that international maritime commerce was well established in what he calls the late bronze age. That North American ports were listed on a sailing timetable of the overseas vessels of the principle Phoenician shipping companies. And that the same information was circulated to customers in America."

This, along with the above information, gives us an entirely different perspective on just how wide spread was international commerce in the ancient world, and just how intelligent these people were. These people were not cavemen or Neanderthals or some people evolutionary revolving from some primitive background, they were intelligent.

How permanent were these settlements in the new world? The book "America B.C." also shows the evidence that the Phoenicians had a twenty acre temple site to Baal and pagan deities in New Hampshire. This is not the evidence of people who were just coming for just a few years to trade with the Indians and go. They had very substantial settlements here.

Israel, as we know, quickly joined itself to the Baal worship of the Phoenicians, so it is not surprising that the Baal worship was dominating the old world colonies of the Israelites and the Phoenicians. There were, also, worshipers of the True God of Israel were present in the new world. In "Saga America" another book by Berry Fell in two issues of the occasional publications of the Uppergraphic Society of which he was president, showed that the Ten Commandments were written in the ancient Hebrew and they were carved into the rock in New Mexico, as we have shown above.

A tablet which contained the Ten Commandments was also found in Ohio; this was found in 1860 at the opening of the Civil War or it very likely would have gotten much more attention. So, obviously, there were Israelites who were serving the True God in America. How many is very

difficult to guess, since the worshipers of the True God did not build pagan temples or leave monuments to the pagan gods, as the Phoenicians did.

Soon after Solomon became king, Egypt joined the Israelites Phoenician alliance, which is discussed in 1 Kings 3:1. "And Solomon made affinity with Pharaoh king of Egypt, and took Pharaoh's daughter, and brought her into the city of David, until he had made an end of building his own house, and the house of the Lord, and the wall of Jerusalem round about."

The Pharaoh of Egypt conquered a city it states: "For Pharaoh king of Egypt had gone up, and taken Gezer, and burnt it with fire, and slain the Canaanites that dwelt in the city, and given it for a present unto his daughter, Solomon's wife." [90] Which was dowry for his daughter who was Solomon and was apparently his first wife. So, we can see that both King Hiram and Egypt's Pharaoh took the classic action of lesser powers toward a greater power, initiating the efforts to try to bind themselves to a superior power.

Egypt's sailors were a fair skinned group of maritime people who settled in the area of ancient Lybia. This is covered in "America B.C." and "Bronze Age America" where he goes into the classical writers, and it is not his own idea.

There is evidence of ancient Egyptians found in Maine, they were known as the 125 Knickknack Indians which Dr. McDonald states was the Algonquian or Iroquois Race.

There have also been Egyptian hieroglyphics found on Long Island. While the ancient Libyan language of their sailors has been found in Quebec, Canada, New Hampshire, Pennsylvania, Oklahoma, California, Texas and New York. This may sound like a roll call for a lot of people in these areas but we highly recommend these books so that you can see for yourself.

There are other states where a person by the name of Gloria Sally has found evidence of inscriptions left by the Celts, the Libyans and the Phoenicians who ascended the Mississippi, Cimmeron and Arkansas Rivers.

The Bible does tell us that the Israelites, Phoenicians and the Egyptians were allied in the first millennium B.C. so we should not be shocked to find that these groups were the ones found in the North American Continent.

Is it any coincidence that the Archeological discoveries of America's past have shown these three groups were working together and exploring what has become the territory called the United States? There is a smoking gun to show that these groups were working together, the new world equivalent of the Rosette Stone has been sitting, largely unappreciated in a Davenport, Iowa museum. Its a trilingual parallel ancient inscription recording a pagan ceremony which looked very much like a May Pole or May Day celebration.

It had joint inscriptions of Egyptian hieroglyphics, the ancient Libyan, which was the language of their sailors and what is now called an Iberian Tunic. This is a language which was descended from the Hebrew Phoenicians. It was found in 1874; so it was not found just yesterday, it has been here and ignored for a long time. But it proves these groups were working together in the new world and it was in inscriptions that could be understood by anyone in those three groups of people.

Another artefact found in Oklahoma refers to the Phoenician god Baal and the Egyptian god Ra, and is dated by Fells to be about 800 B.C. Comment has to be made on the closeness of the Israelite Hebrew and the Phoenician language of Tyre and Sidon to show that the Phoenician inscriptions are also Hebrew or Israelite.

George Wellington a famous British historian of the late 1800s comments in his book Phoenicia: "The words most commonly in use, particles, the pronoun, the forms of the verb, the principle inflections and we may add the numerals in Phoenician are identical or near identical to the pure Hebrew. Many other sources comment on the similarity as well; and many sources reflect that the English language came from the Hebrew."

In the book "Short History of the Near East" by Philip Piffy, he states: "The Phoenician trade on an international scale on textiles, metals, glass,

pottery and etc., gave the country three centuries, beginning around 1000 B.C. a prosperity unmatched in its history."

Now the world recognizes the Phoenicians had an empire at that time, but they do not wish to acknowledge that in 1000 B.C. which was the time that David and Solomon rose to power and three centuries later when the Phoenician power seem to disappear was when the Israelites left the area of Palestine. The Phoenicians did not have them around to be allied to.

Ecclesiastes Two mentions that Solomon collected the best that the world had to offer in architecture, music, art, etc., and there was no bounds to his wisdom. The Bible says that God had given him a heart as big as a sea-shore. It also states that the kings when they brought their gifts to Solomon year by year, included animals, gold, silver, many types products and artwork. Which very likely occurred during the feast of tabernacles, which Israel was keeping at that time.

There were several types of the millennium that parallel the prophecies at that time. For the world was at peace during the time that Solomon was a righteous king living by God's Laws. He was a peaceful king of kings, living in Jerusalem, and the rest of the world was flowing to Israel; he was preceded by an era of great wars, just like the millennium will be, when he and David his father put down many enemies.

So we can see that Solomon ruled an area greater than the Caesars of Rome. The Mediterranean was an Israelites lake; it was ruled by Israel and its allies the Phoenicians and Egyptians; he was in charge of the Mid-East and the Mesopotamians were ruled by Israel; but we don't know how far that went into Asia; Egypt was his ally and he had extensive presence in the new world; America was extensively explored and colonized.

Historians also record that Cadez, a city in Spain that is called Cadez now, was founded by the Phoenicians about 1000 B.C., which, again, was during the reign of David and Solomon. When one looks at the historic records of the Phoenicians the period of 1000 B.C. is very common when

they mark their ascension to greatness, which the Bible also identifies as the time when David and Solomon began their golden age.

Early British historians record that the Phoenicians were heavily involved in colonizing and mining in the British Isles. In Raymond Capt's book "The Traditions of Glastenbury" mentions some of the early historical accounts of the Tribe of Asher of Israel overseeing the mining operations in Britain.

Now when Israel split into Israel and Judah this alliance weakened. Wars were fought between the Israelites and the Judeans, and yes at times they were allied. But Israel went very deep into the Baal worship of Phoenicia and around 870-850 B.C. Israel was ruled by King Ahab, who was married to a Phoenician princess by the name of Jezebel from the city state of Sidon. Which shows that the Phoenician/Israelites alliance was still followed.

When God sent a prophet name Elijah in the middle of the ninth century B.C. Israel's King Ahab had gotten to a point where he was so evil that Elijah had prayed for a drought on the land of Israel. James 5 shows that it lasted 32 years. "Elias (Elijah) was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months." [91]

1 Kings 17 and 18 show that the drought was so severe that the creeks dried up, and there was no vegetation was left for the animals. Starvation was prevalent in both Israel and the Phoenician city states as we can see from the example of Elijah when he was sent to the home of the Sidonian widow.

1 Kings 18 states that King Ahab had searched for Elijah in all the nations. "As the Lord thy God liveth, there is no nation or kingdom, whither my lord hath not sent to seek thee: and when they said, He is not there; he took an oath of the kingdom and nation, that they found thee not." [92]

Now that we know those international maritime routes included the area now known as the United States in the new world, that takes on new

meaning as it was not just in the mid-east where the search took place. For Israel was still among the great nations of the earth with a large population. During this drought, they had one choice, they could either stay and starve or they could migrate elsewhere and live.

Now Israel had a colonial empire that was quite large, and they had many places to go. However, when one has women and children you do not want to put them on a boat and cross the ocean to America, or Great Britain or even to Spain, you wanted to take them somewhere as close to home as possible, to avoid the rigours of distant travel, yet was away from the drought.

History records that Cartage was founded by the Phoenicians in the middle of the 9th century B.C. Which coincides, roughly with the same time that Israel was experiencing its drought. Alfred Church's book called "Cartage" written in 1890 shows that the name Cartage was the Roman name for the city but that is not the name the Carthaginians called themselves. They called the city, according to Alfred Church's book, the Carthagians called themselves Cherjaf-habashaf, which Hebrew meaning "new town." A very appropriate name for a new colony, which was being started.

Now several historians of Cartage records the magistrates were called the Saphetes by the Romans, but again, that is not the name they called their own magistrates. In the Carthaginian language when looking at their artefacts, they called them the Shepheta, which is also Hebrew for the word judges. The name of one of the Books of the Bible - Judges.

One of their early kings was named Marcus, a Hebrew name, still present during the time of Christ, when the High Priests servant was named Marcus. Remember, he's the one who had his ear cut off, when Peter tried to cut off his head but got his ear instead. Also they had a reference to the Hebrew El, which is depicted in Carthagian artefacts as sitting between the Cherubims.

In the book "Daily Life in Cartage" it states the priestly laws of Cartage was: "A very significant resemblance to the Book of Leviticus, and many of the sacrifices corresponded exactly to those of the Hebrews."

Many historians have noticed the similarity of the Carthagenians or as the Romans called it the Tunic tongue, to Hebrew. As late as the fourth century A.D., which was many centuries after Cartage fell, remnants of the Tunic culture were recognized by early church writers such as St. Augustine and St. Jerome as having their roots in the Hebrew language.

The En cyclopedia Judicia, when it talks about the fall of Samaria, to the Assyrians it mentions that the Africans, which was their word for the Carthagenans contested with the Jews over the rights of Arab/Israel, or the land of Israel. Now this would make no sense at all if Cartage did not consist of the descendent of the Tribes of Israel. Who had gone into captivity, or had left that area. But they clearly recognized that the land of Palestine was a cultural heritage to the people of Cartage, since they claimed that land as their own at that time. Cartage became very powerful in the middle of the first millennium B.C. In their early days they were much stronger than Rome and imposed a treaty on Rome, which basically forbade them from sailing in the Western Mediterranean and telling them where they could sail their ships.

They were the enemies of Greece and Rome, they kept them out of the Atlantic Ocean with the Carthagenian Navy. But the Greeks did record some information about what Cartage had found in their Atlantic voyages. And a lot of this will probably be quite new to you.

The Greeks record: "In the sea outside the pillars of Hercules, that's Gibraltar, an island was found by the Carthagians, a wilderness having wood of all kinds, and navigatable rivers; remarkable for various kinds of fruit, many sailing distance day away. When the Carthagenians, who were the masters of the western ocean, observed that many traitors and other men were attracted by the fertility of the soil and the pleasant climate, they frequented it. And some resided there. They feared that knowledge of the land would reach other nations."

You can check the historical accounts and see that Cartage at that point became very protective of what was going on west of the Atlantic Ocean, and did not allow the sailors of other nations past Gibraltar. A Greek, in

the first century by the name of Diatrous, wrote: "Over against Africa, on the other side of Africa lies a very great island in the vast ocean. Many days sail westward of Libya or from Libya westward, the soil is very fruitful, a great part is mountainous and much likewise is a plane. It has several navigatable rivers, it has very large woods, fresh water and all sorts of wild beasts to hunt."

If one will take a globe of the earth and go westward from Libya to that part of the globe, you will come right into the heartland of what is now called the United States. This land was obviously America; and it stayed in the hands of the Israelite Carthageians for many many years after Cartage fell. It was the secret of Cartage's wealth, and Cartage is acknowledged as a very wealthy city at that time. In giving America's land to the Carthagians God was passing on to them the promises to Abraham's seed. Also they inherited the promise of possessing the gates of their enemies. And they held a lock-hold on Gibraltar during much of this time.

Heroticus a Greek historian records that, "the Carthagenians sent an expedition westward from Gibraltar, which included 30,000 men and women, sixty ships, in a time frame of 500-480 B.C. that was when Cartage was much stronger. Westward through the pillars of Hercules to a destination he did not know."

Think for a moment, 30,000 men and women; that's a colonizing expedition, in 60 ships: by doing a little math that is 500 people per ship. Which will give you an idea of the size of the vessel, which even the Greeks acknowledge the Carthagenians were sailing.

This also gives us an idea of the size of the ships the Phoenicians and Israelites had during the reign of David and Solomon's time. Carthagian coins and artefacts have been found in North America, which is a story that is basically not told anywhere. It is in Berry Fells book, but the typical academic writers do not want to really deal with what he has discovered. These coins have been found in Colorado, New York, Alabama, Connecticut and Nevada.



You can even take some of the Carthagenan inscriptions which Fell discusses in his book; you can get a Hebrew Lexicon out of your Concordance and you can come to the exact same translation that Fell does by using those Hebrew Lexicons.

Most people do not realize this because history has been taught from the Greco-Roman perspective but America was long known about, in ancient history. And that Cartage was Israelite in it inception. However, in later years they became a pyelograph people, they became very degenerate. How long they had worshipers of the True God we do not know. But they became extremely evil; indulging in child sacrifice, mass sacrifices of human beings - they became extremely violent. When Rome in the second Tunic war, finally won that war it was actually God's judgment against Cartage and its Israelite people as punishment for their sins. But even in that second Tunic War Cartage came very close to exterminating Rome from off the face of the earth. When Hannibal, who was named after Baal, took an army into the Italian area and was therefore years waging war against the Romans, conquering city after city trying to start a revolt but they were not blessed with victory.

When Cartage fell in the middle of the 2nd century B.C., where did its people go? Since some of the historians talk about the population of Cartage being some 600,000, it also relates that only a few thousand stayed to fight the Romans to the bitter end. Some of them probably sought a new life in Cartage's secret territories in America.

For America has been a land of refuge for a long time before the Pilgrims came. These people which came at that time, were Baal worshipers as the remains in America shows. They had gotten degenerate also, and likely died out in wars, intermarriage with the Indians and possibly from VD from their wild sexual practices; which their monuments testify to. The Carthagenan Israelites in their empire had Southern Spain including the area of Gibraltar, parts of West Africa, and America in their domain.

They traded exclusively in the British Isles. The book "Judah's Scepter and Joseph's Birthright," goes into the story of how Dan and Simeon arriving in Wales and Ireland. The Carthagenians traded extensively with

these people, but there is no evidence that those areas were part of Cartage Empire, they were only mercantile contacts. Let's repeat, America was given to the Israelites by God in the 1600 and 1700's as the British and European Israelite settlers came again. Historians ignore this part of history because it proves their ideas of evolution as a bunch of bologna. [93]

**Question: The Bible States Solomon Brought Apes and Peacocks to Jerusalem. These Were Not Animals or Birds. What Were They?**

**Answer:** Reference to the Apes and Peacocks is made in: "...bringing gold, and silver, ivory, and apes, and peacocks." [94] Silver and brass were not considered of great value in the days of Solomon. And every three years the navy of Tarshish came bringing with them gold and silver. They also brought ivory, "apes" and "peacocks." These last two do not refer to animals or birds, but rather, they are the Commercial Names of Lead and Copper brought in the ships. From America!

In modern language we refer to animals or birds, but rather, they are the commercial names of Lead and Copper brought in the ships. In modern language we refer to iron as "pigs" so, too, in ancient times Lead was called "Apes" because of its peculiar formation and color, while Copper Ore, with its rich and changeable coloring, was called "Peacocks."

**Question: Did the Second Tables of Stone Given to Moses by God Have Less Writing on Them than Was on the First Which Was Broken by Moses?**

**Answer:** After Moses had broken the first tables which God had given him: "... the Lord gave me the two tables of stone, even the tables of the covenant." [95]

Which two had been written by God Himself! "And the Lord delivered unto me two tables of stone written with the Finger of God; and on them was written according to all the words, which the Lord spake with you in

the mount out of the midst of the fire in the day of the assembly." [96]  
The second tables were also inscribed by God but only with the Ten Commandments. "And he (God) wrote on the tables, according to the first writing the ten commandments..." [97]

Here we can clearly see that God omitted all but the Ten Commandments. For the first set of tables contained, not only the Ten commandments, but all the words—God spoke to them at Mount Sinai.

### **Question: Where Is the "Appointed Place?"**

**Answer:** In the course of the centuries the House of Israel passed on, moving into the wilderness of central and southern Europe and eventually coming into the Isles of the Sea. Some took the water route, passing through the Mediterranean and sailing by sea to the British Isles, however, the main body of the people trekked overland to the appointed place of which Nathan the Prophet spoke when he told David that the Lord had said: "Moreover I will appoint a Place for my people Israel..." [98]

That this appointed place includes more than just the Isles of the Sea is clear from the directions given through Isaiah which bound the territory in which later day Israel would reside: "Behold, these shall come from far: and, lo, these from the north and from the west—" [99] Also, it had to be a place large enough for a thousand million and more. Prior to this the Lord's message through Isaiah was: "—I will preserve thee, and give thee fro a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages." [100]

The wilderness of the people, where the House of Israel, in exile from Palestine, were to grow and expand into a great multitude of people and company of nations, and where they were to find grace in the sight of the Lord: "—found grace in the wilderness..." [101]

This is defined by Isaiah as north and west of Palestine. "Thus saith the Lord, In an acceptable time have I heard thee, and in a day of salvation have I helped thee: and I will preserve thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate

heritages; That thou mayest say to the prisoners, Go forth; to them that are in darkness, Shew yourselves. They shall feed in the ways, and their pastures shall be in all high places. They shall not hunger nor thirst; neither shall the heat nor sun smite them: for he that hath mercy on them shall lead them, even by the springs of water shall he guide them. And I will make all my mountains a way, and my highways shall be exalted. Behold, these shall come from far: and, lo, these from the north and from the west..." [102]

In giving a short history of Israel and their Westward trek, I am going to deviate from my usual procedure and am not going to insert the Scripture reference. If you wish the Scripture reference for this get yourself a Strong's Concordance and look them up, it will help you in your studies, which is why I am not giving them to you here. I hope you will try to prove me in error for that way you will become even more convinced that we are correct in our beliefs. Also if I am redundant at times please forgive me, and think about the services you have heard from your "Ministers" for they repeat themselves without end and never will reveal as much as you have already received from this book, this combined presentation.

When Joseph was a ruler in Egypt and, due to the famine, had his father and brethren brought to Egypt, they are said to have been seventy souls. Judah had twin sons, Pharez and Zarah. It is notable that Zarah's line is not a part of the genealogy of those who went into Egypt, as is the Pharez line.

Zarah, whose name means sprout or seed, was the twin whose hand appeared first, at birth, and on which a scarlet thread was placed. Pharez was born, then Zarah. This hand and the red thread are still a part of the heraldic symbolism of Ulster, Ireland today—the very land Zarah's descendants peopled. Zarah's line had wandered away from Judah's family about 220 years before the Exodus (1480 B.C.), from Egypt. Darda and Calcol, grandsons of Zarah, are said to have moved westward. Camden's "**Historia Britannica**" tells us Calcol sailed from Egypt to Spain to Ireland where he established Ulster (1600 B.C.). From these men of Israel we have had at least ten American presidents and seven famous inventors,

according to the National Geographic Magazine of August, 1964, page 261.

Abraham's descendants, these Judah sons, were still called Heb(e)rews, being descended from Heber, meaning "colonizer." Heber was a great great grandson of Noah. Thus we have them naming the places they went. Iberia (Spain), and upon arriving in Ireland, they were known as Hibernians. In Spain we have ZARAgossa on the (H)ebro River to this day, and for 3600 years Ulster has had the emblem of the red hand.

In the meantime, Zarah's son, Darda, moved northward into Asia Minor, founding a nation on the shores of the DARDAnelles and establishing a kingdom, the capitol of which was Troy. Troy was founded (1446 B.C.) 34 years before the Exodus of the rest of Israel from Egypt as we learn from Pitavious' "History of the World." Josephus, the historian, calls Darda "Dardanus." Sharon Turner's "History of the Anglo-Saxons" mentions in the Langfedgatel Dardanus' descendants from troy, as does Homer's Iliad. Turner further name Troes, a grandson of Dardanus, as having a son whose descendants were Capys, Anchises and Aeneas, the latter a famous hero of Troy. These sons of Judah through Zarah's line never entered the Land of Palestine.

Calcol and Darda were evidently very brilliant men. Solomon is said to have been wiser than all men, even these. They carried the scarlet thread of Zarah —the red branch of Irish history. To this day, a red thread runs through every British rope in the Navy; and each official British paper is wrapped with a red cord.

Geoffrey of Monmouth handed down the British version of a Trojan colony, led by one Brutus, the great great grandson of Aeneas, thus a descendant of Darda, as settling the British Isles not long after the fall of Troy (1185 B.C.). The stone he is supposed to have stepped on is still marked today in Totnes, in the sound of Dart, in Devon, twelve miles inland from Torbay. The English Chronicles list the kings in Britain along with those who ruled in Old Israel. Brutus is said to have ruled when Eli was a priest in Israel (1070 B.C.).

The Trojan War was a struggle between kindred people. Agamemnon, king of the Greek Mycenae, led an expedition against the Trojan DARDAnians to rescue Helen, the wife of his brother Menelaus, King of Sparta. The Spartans in many histories are called the Lacedemonians and brethren of the Israelites, as they are in the Apocrypha in 1 Maccabees 12:2, 6. (The books of the Apocrypha were in all original King James Bibles; until the Jews through their influence in the church had them expunged). Josephus records an exchange of letters. The seal affixed to the Lacedemonian letter bore the DANite emblem, the eagle and serpent. Homer, the poet, also described this seal in the Iliad.

Herodotus (1, 56) says the Lacedemonians were of Doric blood, so called from Dorus, son of Helen. The earliest immigrants to Greece, according to Diodorus Siculus, were Lacedemonians. The greater part of Israel followed Moses. Those who left Egypt settled in Argos and Athens, while some sailed to regions of Italy and Greece. Their descendants the Young's Concordance lists under the word "Gentiles," from the word Hellenes, from Hellas the Greek city, named for Helen of Troy. These Israelites were known for their heroic endeavours.

Cadmus introduced letters of the alphabet to Greece, according to Herodotus (11, 49). Tyre was close to Dan and provided the mariners, even in Solomon's time. We know DANites and other Israelites resided in Tyre, which was given to the tribe of Asher but was never occupied by them.

One of the most ancient historians, Sanchoniathon, who lived before the Trojan War, said that the Gods, or deities of Greece, etc., were based on ancestor worship and were of Hebrew origin. Cory's ancient Fragments, 1876, page 21-22, tells us that Kronus was Jacob (Israel), and he had a son called Judah, Zeus.

Gladstone, in his "Juventus Mundi" page 36-41, traces the origin of the name DANone to 200 years before the Trojan War (1300 B.C.). he does not identify the Greeks with Dan, but suggests the original tribe of

DANAans may have existed with an Egyptian origin, and why not? Dan was in Egypt. And why did Dan "remain in ships?"

Other writers identify the Danoi as having left Greece and settled in Ireland, these called the "Tuatha De Danaans" (Tribe of Dan).

The Irish Chronicles say their coming was opposed by those already in Ireland, which caused a battle to follow. The Danaans were victorious and peace ensued when they found their opponents spoke a language similar to their own.

We have Israelites then in Greece, Italy, Spain, Britain, Ireland and Scotland living active lives and having kings over them before the children of Israel ever left Egypt and had their Red Sea Exodus experience. These children of Judah/Israel were never in Egypt or Palestine but God in His wisdom was preparing for those who would eventually be taken in Assyrian and Babylonian captivity, and brought to these places in their movements westward.

From the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve were sent west. Cain was sent east to the land of Nod. When Noah was in the ark during the flood, he too was taken east to Ararat. David was told while he stood in Old Jerusalem that God would give His people "a land of their own" and move them into it. We will see the westward migrations of Israel well pre-figured in the tabernacle which one entered from the east and had to work their way west to the Holy Place, and then to the Holy of Holies.

These in Ireland, Scotland and Britain were preparing the Holy Place. They, in their lands, were the forerunners of what was promised to Jacob, in that he would become a multitude of commonwealth of nations. Jacob passed this blessing to Joseph's sons Ephraim and Manasseh.

Ephraim was to be God's first-born (nation). This is exactly what we see God working out so long ago. We learn that in our day God would still have His two nations, one the Holy Place and the other the Holy of Holies. They are spoken of as two sticks and such they are today.

Two nations—two nations based on the teachings of Jesus Christ. The one stick was to be Ephraim with Judah as we have been reading and Judah we are told would be with the House of David, or the Throne of the Lord that Solomon sat on.

The Queen (of England) claims heritage with the royal Line of David, keeping the Throne between Judah's feet until Shiloh (Jesus Christ) comes in power and glory. We know the other stick is America, the Holy of Holies, His Kingdom place from which He will reign. God heard when the children of Israel cried because of their bondage and slavery in Egypt. Most people know the stories of Moses and Pharaoh, the escape of Israel through the Red Sea, and Israel's 40 years of wandering in the wilderness.

Few, even "Ministers," know that at the giving of the Laws and Ordinances, Statutes and Judgements the Israelites told Moses, "All the Lord hath spoken, we will do." They became husband and wife. Our Father, the God of Israel, tells us: "Thy maker is thine husband: the Lord of hosts is His name; they redeemer the Holy One of Israel. the God of the whole earth shall He be called."

The plan was that they, God and Israel were to conceive a child, the Kingdom of God on earth. The Children of Israel had gone into Egypt as 70 souls but came out as 600,000 men, plus women and children (which would total from one to two million people) not counting the mixed multitude.

There were none feeble, none diseased. Being a husband to Israel, He now took complete care of them. As an example, we have God telling them, "Thy raiment waxed not old upon thee—neither did their foot swell these forty years—I have led you forty years in the wilderness; your clothes are not waxen old upon you and thy she is not waxen old upon thy foot.—Ye have not eaten bread, neither have ye drunk wine or strong drink, that ye might know that I am the Lord your God." God fed his wife (Israel) manna and they did not have to work to eat (demonstrating that it is the husband who is to support the woman, the wife, and not as we do today). This is spoken of as angel's food. They were given water from the rock.



There was a mixed multitude among the Israelites, and these caused Israel to become disgruntled, saying they wanted the cucumbers, leeks and onions, meat and fish they had in Egypt. God became very angry with their lusting. He gave them quail—equal to a day's journey on each side of them and two cubits high, which is too deep to be happy in. Before they had their meat out from between their teeth and chewed.

God caused a plague to hit them. He was really wrathful, and He called the place Kibroth Hattaavah (graves of lust) because the ones who lusted after meat all died and were buried there. God had fed them manna so they would learn, "Man does not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord." He chose these people to walk in His commandments and His ways and to fear Him.

It was His plan to greatly bless them and form them into a great Kingdom, and He didn't want them to say in their hearts "my power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth." "But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God; for it is He that giveth thee power to get wealth, that He may establish His covenant which He sware unto thy fathers as it is this day."

This was the covenant He made with Abraham to bring forth from his seed a great nation and a commonwealth of nations. They were to be a special Holy people above all the people on the earth. We were to love Him and keep His commandments so He could bless us in every way. Israel was to live by every word of God. Paul tells us, "Faith cometh by hearing and hearing by the Word of God."

He wanted our implicit trust in all. We shall soon find ourselves in Armageddon (place of no way out); then our people will learn their lesson, for He shall save us. Know therefore the Lord thy God. he is God, the faithful God which keepeth His covenants and has mercy on them that love Him and keep His commandments, to a thousand generations (a generation is accepted to be about 40 years), so this means 40,000 years (more or less). From Abraham to Christ was 2000 years—From Christ to the present 2000 years.—That means we still have 36,000 years just to fulfill the Abrahamic Covenant! He repays them that hate Him to their face to destroy them.

When He comes He will miserably destroy those wicked men. "Bring those who would not have Me reign over them and slay them before Me." An entire generation of Israel died in the wilderness because of their disobedience, even to making of a golden calf to worship while Moses was in the Mount with God.

They wanted other gods, an abomination to YHVY-God, something He detests! Finally, Joshua led them into the land flowing with milk and honey and, again, most of the stories of the entry into Palestine and their lives there under the judges and finally the kings are known to most people. Samuel was made to understand the people wanted other gods and human kings. God told Samuel, "They have not rejected thee, but they have rejected Me that I should not reign over them." God told Samuel to "make them a king," and he then decided that he would divorce His adulterous wife, take His name from her (ISRAEL -- ruling with El, God) and so their child could not be born.

Assyrian Captivity of the Northern Ten Tribes of Israel 740 to 689 B.C.: Shalmaneser, King of Assyria, besieged Samaria, the capitol of northern Israel, for three years. The story tells how Israel now feared other gods and walked in the statutes of the heathen. God was very angry with Israel and removed them out of His sight. They were placed even among the cities of the Medes and in Assyrian towns. Imagine what the feelings of the people must have been to be moved away from their relatives and country and God. Israel was rent from the House of David and taken into Assyrian Captivity. We learn God was very angry with much of Judah as well.

In a few short years, Sennacherib became King of Assyria (702 B.C.) and it was he that came and took 46 fortified cities of Judah and led 200,150 men of Judah also into this captivity. We can see the six-sided clay prism in the British Museum, and you can study and see that they fought on camel-back as they laid siege to Jerusalem, and the assault of engines and the use of mines. They certainly prove the Bible. As was the custom of his day, Sennacherib deported masses of people to Assyria. The Judah people he took were totally distinct and separate from Judahites taken one

hundred years later to Babylon by Nebuchadnezzar, 42,000 of whom did return to Jerusalem after 70 years. They were permitted to rebuild the Temple for the coming of Jesus Christ.

The migrations of ten-tribed Israel and Judah are not difficult to trace. Josephus, writing in Antiquities of the Jews, said, "There are but two tribes in Asia and Europe subject to the Romans, while the ten tribes are beyond the Euphrates until now and are an immense multitude."

In 2 Esdras 13:39 (Apocrypha) we read of Christ coming to (New) Zion and gathering to Himself a peaceful multitude: "These are the ten tribes which were carried away prisoners out of their own land in the time of Hoshea the king, whom Shalmaneser, the King of Assyria, led away captive, and he carried them over the waters and they came into another land—But they took this counsel among themselves, that they would leave the multitude of the heathen and go forth into a further country where never man kind dwelt—That they might there keep their statutes, which they had not kept in their own land—And they entered into Euphrates by the narrow passage of the rive—Through that country there was a great way to go, namely a year and a half; and the same region is called Arsareth." Arsareth is a region now known as Romania. The river Sareth is still there. They passed through Transylvania east of Hungary. In Treves, Germany, a tourist booklet tells they were settled by people the Assyrians brought in. The Apostles of Christ were instructed to preach to the Lost Sheep of the House of Israel.

In Treves they have the crypt of Matthew, and a coat they claim to be Christ's. They (lost Israel) would continue westward into Britain, the Holy Place, from where in time a remnant would come to found this great nation America, founded for the unfettered worship of Jesus Christ and Him only. The most convincing point is that we are here, doing and having done to us, the very prophetic appointments the Bible foretold concerning us, His Israel people, in that Great Nation promised to Abraham so long ago.

There are many artefacts in the British Museum and others that give the names of Israel as she was called by each country through which God passed her. She was to pass through Assyria and was there known as "Bet

Khumri." Jehu was king of ten-tribed Israel and he was known as the "Son of Omri" (Khumri). There is a black alabaster obelisk in the British Museum that depicts all this.

The same folk in Babylon were known as Ghimri or Gamir, and as Sacae in Persia. The historian Herodotus (500 B.C.) said the Sakae were led by Darius who married the daughter of Cyrus. the early Greek writers call the Scythians the Sakae, and Ptolomy links the Persian Sakae to the Saxons. So, we have the movement of the Israelite people through the nations they were to pass through in their 2520 years of captivity and punishment. We have the names they were known by in each nation.

There is so much proof on the historical stones, obelisks, rocks and clay tablets that it is not hard to locate Israel in her Migration west. She had not really been lost, nor had she ever completely given up the religion of the Temple. We have at Pentecost those who had come back to keep feasts: "...devout men out of every nation under heave..." Parthians (north of Persia), Medes (Iraq of today), Phrygia and other Asia Minor cities, Egypt, Northern Africa (Libya), Rome, Crete, Arabs—all called men of Israel, men of Judah.[103]

After Peter preached, the people that were added to the Church that had been in the wilderness [104] were 3,000—They understood it was for them he (Jesus Christ) had died, the Lost Sheep of the House of Israel, and they gladly accepted His gift. The Israelites and the 46 cities of Judah with their 200,000 citizens (of Judah and Benjamin) were taken into Assyrian Captivity because of their idolatry and sin. The Israelites who had gone into Egypt cried out and were rescued from their bondage by God, who led them out through the Red Sea. They wandered 40 years in the wilderness, again due to sin. An entire generation that God felt was unworthy died during this period, with the exception of two overcomers, Caleb and Joshua.

Finally, they were allowed to enter Canaan. This could be termed the capital of the devils' world. In the gospel of Luke, "Satan" did tell Jesus the kingdoms were delivered unto him, and to whomever he chose he would deliver them. In taking their capital, God was pre-figuring his eventual taking of the entire earth. Canaan at that time consisted of seven

nation: Hittites, Girgasites, Hivites, Canaanites, Jebusites, Amorites, and Perizites.

Israel was told to kill all the men, women and little ones. "Thou shalt save alive nothing that breatheth, but utterly destroy them," and the same list of nations is given as in [105]. Instead of obeying, "stiff-necked" Israel dwelt among them and "look their daughters to be their wives and gave their daughters to their sons, and served other gods."; "The children of Israel did evil in the sight of the Lord and forgot the Lord their God."

The divorced wife, Israel, He removed from His sight. Ten-tribed Israel would never have a king in her again, until her seven times punishment was over, and Jesus Christ became her King. Was Israel punished seven times, one for each nation, because she had not destroyed them, as God told her to do? So Israel was carried away to Assyria and she began her 2520-year trek--west—to become that "Great Nation" promised to Abraham—the Kingdom of God on Earth which Christ instructed us to pray for. Babylonian Captivity 604 B.C.: To understand the story of these two nations (Israel and Judah) it is advisable to read the entire chapter of Ezekiel 23. Some of Judah was left in the land of Palestine. They committed abominations like the ten northern tribes and God said they had defiled His sanctuary, profaned His Sabbaths, and had committed adultery, and that He would bring up a company upon them that they might come to know Him.

These are two sisters (Aholah the elder is Israel, and Aholibah is Judah), the same two that are in the two sticks of Ezekiel, and the same two families which the Lord hath chosen.

Again, we find in our day the enemies of these two countries saying, "These two countries shall be mine," but the Lord says they are not calculating correctly, "Whereas the Lord is there" and He will protect His Children and Save us...we shall not be theirs.

God said He Himself broke the Brotherhood between Israel (whom He terms Beauty), and Judah (He calls Bands). The Brotherhood between Britain and America is still broken. We are still two nations ...two

sticks...two sisters...for just a little while longer. We already can read the signs that we shall become one nation with one King over us in the land He chose for His Kingdom, in America. He will be our King.

Micah describes the destroyer (Russia) coming upon Britain, the Judah House of David, and the Ephraim people making a great deal of noise by the movement of men, and the King goes out the gate, with the Lord at the head of them. All being gathered into the barn--the regathering of all Israel into the land of God gave Israel so long ago when He told David He would plant us in a land of our own: America!

We hear so much about "brotherhood" today, but if the brotherhood between Israel and Judah is broken, how can we have brotherhood with the other races and nations which are more divergent than we of Israel and Judah are from each other? Jesus said, "Whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother."

The keeping of God's Laws is the basis for brotherhood. The Israel race is the only people to whom the commandments of God were ever given. It was Abraham's determination to go after the kings of those seven nations, some of whom were taking his nephew Lot captive. No one else would tackle them. After Abraham had overcome them and brought Lot and his wealth back, God, in the person of Melchizedek, came to bless him. God felt the faith and obedience seed in Abraham was useable. "For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him and they shall keep the way of the Lord to do justice and judgement; that the Lord may bring upon Abraham 'that' which He hath spoken of him."

The "that" was the covenant God had sworn, saying Abraham's seed (or offspring) would become a Great and Mighty Nation that would bless all nations of the earth--just as America has been and is doing--foreign aid--rehabilitating our enemies of war--taking in the outcasts, feeding and clothing the world. Unfortunately, our leaders have not been wise in their judgements and we find ourselves helping the ungodly and loving them that hate our Savior--therefore is wrath upon us from before the Lord! If our people would learn who they are and that we as Christians

should not allow our tithes and tax dollars to be given in support of the Anti-Christ religion of Judaism, we would not have the Lebanese situation, nor the taking of hostages.

"Many deceivers are entered into the world who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an anti-Christ... Whosoever transgresseth and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ hath both the Father and the Son ('Oh, Lord thou art our Father and Redeemer'). If any come unto you and bring not this doctrine (personal and national), receive him not into your house (or country); neither bid him God speed, for he that biddeth him God speed is a partaker of his evil deeds."; "If my people (Israel) turn from their wicked ways I will hear.—and forgive—and heal their land."

We are the same Israel people of old which God sent into captivity for their sin—2520 years! Let's be heard by Him; let us work more earnestly to educate our people and get our nation turned from its wicked ways (helping the ungodly, etc.) so He can heal our nation. The wife, Israel, must make herself ready for the remarriage, the Wedding. As soon as Israel of old would repent and cry out, God would hear immediately and help her! With the brotherhood broken, Judah as sinful as her sister, God brought Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, to take her captive. The first attack rendered 3000 men of Judah to him; later, Circa 595 B.C., there were 10,832 craftsmen, smiths and the pick of the fighting men led bound to Babylon. The Babylonian army had spent eighteen months laying in siege before Jerusalem.

Josephus the historian records a terrible famine at the time, and a pestilence of distemper. Finally, Babylon won. Jerusalem was demolished and left deserted for 70 years. Zedekiah, the king of Israel- Judah, had seen his sons killed, then his own eyes were put out. Years later when Christ was on trial in Jerusalem, the people said truthfully, "We have no king but Caesar." From the removal of Zedekiah as King of Judah, there has never been a king in Old Jerusalem. The Zionists today talk of putting a king in power—now!

The Throne: God had sworn to David in a covenant, "Thy seed will I establish forever and build up thy throne to all generations."

David's seed would endure forever and his throne as the days of heaven. Even if they sinned, God would keep His covenant (contingent on His Word, not on the party to the covenant beside Himself). He would not lie. "His (David's) seed (offspring progeny, family) shall endure forever, and his throne as the sun before me. It shall be established forever as the moon, as a faithful witness in heaven."

David shall never want a man ('iysh' - Hebrew for man or woman, as in [106] to sit one the throne of the House of Israel.[107] of the fruit of David's body they would sit on the throne... nothing said about male or female).

We do not want to forget that this is God's Throne! He abdicated it for Israel to have human kings. Nor should we expect the ruling royal family to be exemplary, for God told us what human kings would be doing to us, and they do. David and Solomon were sinful men. The Throne of David was to always have Judah [108] cling to her until Christ returned. God had prepared for this happenstance when Zarah/Judah went to Ireland instead of (staying in) Egypt. In Israel there were female judges, such as Deborah. By God's own laws, he could use the daughters of the king to assure David's continuity.

There were two daughters, Tamar (Tea Tephi) and Scota, for whom Scotland was named, so some historians tells us. Because of a family relationship, the care of the girls fell to Jeremiah the Prophet, and Baruch his scribe.

God told Jeremiah, "See, I have this day set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms to root out and to pull down, to destroy and to throw down, to build and to plant."

Ezekiel 17 is about the "topmost twig" of the cedar tree (representative of royalty), and Tea Tephi being the princess through whom the House of David could be carried.



Jeremiah and Baruch took her and her sister to Ireland where the other line of Zarah/Judah was already involved in sea traffic and mercantile trade. Tea Tephia married Eochaidh the Heremon, King of Ireland, a descendant of the Zarah line of Judah, thus joining both of Judah's twin sons; heirs in the royal line, from whom have come the kings of Ireland, Scotland and England to this day, and healed the Breach as spoken of by the midwife which delivered Zarah and Pharez. The House of David was in the Holy Place.

They would stay there awaiting the time when the Holy of Holies could come into existence and our King would return to earth. We are assured Tea Tephia married into the tribe of her fathers.

He was the twin son, Pharez, and her husband of the Zarah line. We have Tea Tephia's poems and story of her trip, and she names those with her, and Irish history carries the story of their shipwreck at Carrickfergus, off the coast of northern Ireland. Royal records of the arrival of Jeremiah coincide with the scriptural date of their flight to Egypt, and then West. We can visit Jeremiah's grave in Loch Erne, a land-locked island in Ireland, and at Meath, north of Dublin, one can visit the spot at TARA where Tea Tephia is interred. Tea Tephia, Scotia, Jeremiah and Baruch had taken with them, among other items of interest, the stone on which the Kings of Israel had been crowned. Today, this stone is in the Throne Chair of England, in Westminster Abbey, with a sign that says it is believed to be the stone Jacob slept on! God's Kingdom is called a stone kingdom. This is perfect symbology.

The Bible says the throne would be overturned three times before Christ came for it. Tea Tephia took (the throne and) the stone to Ireland Circa 580 B.C., and for 1083 years Irish Kings were crowned on this stone. In 503 A.D., Fergus (the Great) crossed from Ulster, Ireland to Lona, Scotland with the stone, and around 563 A.D., St. Columba had Lia Fail (the name by which you find information in the Encyclopaedia about this stone), the stone of Jacob, taken to Scotland.

In the Scottish National Library there is a Gaelic manuscript written by Dugaid the Scot, son of Mcphail, in 1467, containing the complete genealogy of Scottish Kings, showing descent from Irish Kings, to Abraham through Judah. The stone stayed in Scone, Scotland until 1296 A.D., when it was transferred to London by Edward I, and a chair was constructed to hold it. All British kings and queens have been crowned upon it.

God has verified Ezekiel's prophecy. The throne did overturn three times, from: (1) Jerusalem to Ireland, (2) Ireland to Scotland, and (3) Scotland to England where it is between Judah's feet until Christ (Shiloh) comes. And it will be given to Him.

The Kingdom (and her King) would come to the daughter of Jerusalem/America. The Lord shall reign over them in Mt. Zion/America (Jerusalem is where the church is. Zion is the place from where the laws of God go forth). America is spoken of as New Zion, New Jerusalem and daughter Zion, daughter Jerusalem. The throne will have one more overturn to His Holy of Holies, His Kingdom, when He joins His two sticks into one Kingdom in America. While the royal line of David was being preserved in the west, God was preparing Judah in Babylon to return and rebuild Old Jerusalem and the Temple again. The Assyrian Empire had been conquered by the Babylonians.

Now the great Babylonian Empire was being overcome by the Medes and Persians (modern day Iran and Iraq). While in Babylon, some of these Israelites of Judah did not practice the segregation required always of Israel.

They mingled the Holy Seed with that of the people of the lands of Babylon, taking their sons and daughters to marry. The people of Babylon are as follows: Canaanites, Hittites, Perizzites, Jebusites, Ammonites, Moabites, Egyptians, Amorites [109]. This is almost an identical list of the nations in Deuteronomy 7:1 that God told Israel to kill...wipe out...destroy, even children.

There were many with no (kept) genealogies (only Israelites have ever kept genealogies as a race). They were polluted. They could not show their father's house, nor their seed whether they were of Israel. They separated from Judah (segregation), all the mixed multitude, when they had heard the Law of God.

However, there was a group who did not intermarry with those wicked forbidden races. Zerubbabel, a forefather of Jesus who is found in both the Matthew and Luke genealogy of Jesus, was pure of race, and thus could build the Temple.[110] Abijah, a forefather of John the Baptist[111] was also pure and qualified to build the Temple. This is very positive evidence that neither John nor Jesus, who were cousins, were Jews.

We have some of the wives of these God-fearing and obedient men raising a great cry against their "brethren the Jews," Judahites who had married Babylonian seed. They had learned the art of usury in Babylon, something that the Bible forbids Israelites to have anything to do with. These evil people were "Exacting usury, everyone of his brother." Nehemiah said for them to leave off the usury, and to return the land, vineyard, olive orchards, houses, corn, wine, oil that they were exacting of them. It sounds much like our modern farm crisis. Assyria took Israel and Judah out of the land and brought in their own people, and Sabeans. The poor of Israel who had been left behind intermarried with them and became known as the "Samaritans." When Babylon moved Judah to Babylon, no people were brought into the land, but it lay idle for 70 years. The Judahites in Babylon did marry the Babylonians and became known as "Jews."

In 1400 B.C., the ten-tribed Israel had married into the same seven forbidden races, much to God's displeasure. This led to His divorcing them and sending them away into captivity for 2520 years. When Judah returned to Jerusalem from Babylon, they were two very distinct people. They lived side by side for 400 years. The mixed seed known as Jews was one group, and the pure seed group were the "good basket of figs" or of Judah. The one group would kill Jesus, the other would "return to Him with their whole heart."

From A Pictorial History of the Jewish People we learn the Jews returned with the "synagogue," while the pure devout held to the Temple (God's House of Prayer). They looked forward to the coming of Christ. The Jews brought back the Babylonian Talmud ("halacah" or oral tradition), while the pure-seeded kept the scrolls of The Holy Scriptures, Christ read from a scroll of Isaiah 61:2.

Nehemiah calls our attention to what may be the first history of "Yiddish." Judahites had wed wives of Ashdod, Ammon and Moab. Their children spoke half in the speech of Ashdod and could not speak the Jews' language, but mixed their tongue according to the language of each people. Paul asked if God had cast away His people? then he quoted from 1 Kings 19:18, that God still had 7,000 who had not bowed their knees to Baal. This is how (and why) the writer of Acts could say there were "devout men out of every nation" in Jerusalem at Pentecost.

If representatives of "every nation under heaven" were hearing in their own tongue, or language of the country from which they had come, and they were addressed by Peter as "ye men of Judea/Israel," it is reasonable to believe they had come to the Feast of Pentecost, since it was required of Israel's males to appear before the Lord three times a year: at Passover, at Pentecost and at the Feast of the Tabernacles. This was Pentecost and there were present local residents and some of the "devout" dispersed of Israel. Many nations are mentioned, the first four being of the Persian Empire. Arabians and those in Asia could have been those of India, which the book of Esther mentions.

Peter addressed the "strangers scattered abroad" and in the next verse qualified it by saying they were Elect (Israel is God's elect.[112] Our understanding will be enhanced by considering what the American Encyclopedia says about Gaul, the land of the Galatians. Caesar, in his Gaelic wars, said all Gaul was divided into three parts, one part called Gallic Transalpina (over the Alps to the east just where ten-tribed Israel had wandered into Romania and Transylvania and on toward Germany). Another part of Gaul was Cisalpina, running along upper Italy to the Adriatic where much of Judah would pass on their way to Italy and Spain.

The third part was from the Pyrenees mountains between Spain and France as we know it, where vast numbers settled. This section of Gaul ran to the Rhine River and Treves (which was settled with Israelites by Assyria. In 397 A.D., this group of Celts seem to have disappeared. Could these be those Anglo-Saxons no one seems to know the origin of? The encyclopedia says their kinsmen were British.

The Companion Bible, in Introductory Notes to Galatians, enlightens us, "It may be added that in Galatia proper, the people spoke in Keltic, a language they used unto at least the time of Jerome, who records hearing the same tongue there as he heard in Treves. The Keltic predominated in Galatia."

Paul went over all the country of Galatia! Paul was preaching and telling them of each of the laws which, if they broke, "Ye shall not inherit the Kingdom of God."

Like Peter told the Israelites on the day of Pentecost, Paul and all the disciples were going to be the "other sheep" Christ said he had, not of the fold in Jerusalem. They were telling them to repent, be Baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins and reception of the Holy Ghost. "For the promise is to you and your children and all that are afar off (meaning we of the present time) even as many as the Lord our God shall call."

Jesus said, "Them (the other sheep) I must bring and they shall hear my voice and there shall be one fold and one shepherd."

One nation and one King over all twelve tribes of Israel. Another son of Jacob was Dan, whose family and progeny were noted for their navigational skills; they, too, settled in the British (B(e)rith-Covenant, I(y)ishman) Isles. Ten of the tribes of Israel are easily traced from 720 B.C., in their captivity in Assyria, to Europe as Celtic speaking people.

Further study in this "Migrations of Israel" series finds them in the British Isles, and much later in America... hat great nation promised to Abraham wherein they would dwell and "move no more." The other two tribes of Israel were taken in captivity to Babylon Circa 602 B.C. Only 42,360 of these captives returned to Jerusalem after being in Babylon for 70 years.

Cyrus, King of Persia, was the world leader at the time. Cyrus gave the proclamation in 539 B.C., for Judah, at God's command, to return and build the Lord a house in Jerusalem. Cyrus returned 5,400 silver and gold vessels the Babylonians had removed from the Jerusalem temple to their temple to their gods. Those of Judah who had been brought into Babylon and who did not return as part of the 42,360 are reputed by both Jewish and Christian scholars to have moved on west into Spain and Portugal.

From the return of Judah to Jerusalem under Cyrus, they lived through the period depicted in Nebuchadnezzar's dream that Daniel interpreted: Babylon (the head of gold) had conquered Assyria; Medo-Persia (the breast and arms of silver) had conquered Babylon during Judah's captivity; Greco- Macedonia (the belly and thighs of brass) would defeat Persia in 479 B.C.; afterwards, pagan Rome (the legs and feet of iron) would be the world power, and it was when Jesus Christ was born. These changing empirical powers had their effect of the Judahites who were the "Two Baskets of Figs" as they lived side by side in and around Jerusalem.

Leaders in this era, such as Aristobulus II and his brother John Hyrcanus, had a violent quarrel and Pagan Rome had to be called in to arbitrate the dispute. The Encyclopaedia Americana calls Hyrcanus a Jewish high priest (135-105 B.C.) who forced the Idumeans to become "Jews." Idumea is the Greek for Edomites. In the Bible Esau, Edo, Mt. Seir and Idumea are interchangeable for the offspring of Esau, Jacob's twin brother.

Herod the Great (37 B.C. to 4 A.D.), gave the order to kill the babies up to two years of age in the hope of murdering the baby Jesus, and was one of these Edomite Esau Jews. They ruled under the leadership of the roman Caesars. God had told Abraham He would not hide from him His plans (nor are they hidden from us). Isaac would be born to Abraham and Sarah, and God would establish His Covenant with Isaac and his Seed (Race).

The Covenant was that Abraham's seed would become a great and mighty nation. This establishment of God's Kingdom on Earth would not be contingent upon Abraham s offspring, but upon God Himself.

God swore by Himself: "When God made promise to Abraham, because He could swear by no greater, he swore by Himself." God told Abraham upon his offering of Isaac, "...In thy seed shall all the nations on earth be blessed, because thou hast obeyed my voice."

This would have a dual fulfilment. Christ would be born of that seed and would bless all nations. The seed of Abraham would become the Great Nation we have become, blessing all nations, feeding and clothing them, taking them in until Christ would come a second time and take Government on His shoulders.

After Abraham's children were formed into a nation (the tribes of "Israel," which means "ruling or prevailing with EL, with God"...the same name given to Jacob by God), the Israelites were given the Laws of God. Some of these were on two tablets of Stone.

The people said "All these we will do." Hereby God took the Israelites to be His wife. They conceived their spiritual child, the Kingdom, but Israel became an adulterous wife and God removed her out of His sight into Assyrian captivity, giving her a bill of divorce.[113] Israel had gone after other gods and kings (nations) so when God divorced her. He took His Name "El" from her, hence she could not bring forth their "child" for it would have been a "bastard" nation.

Now, God had a Problem: Or so it would seem to the human mind. Our Heavenly Father, however, had planned for this contingency from the beginning; He had put in the constellations the Gospel of The Kingdom, and in that plan of Salvation "He was the Lamb, slain before the foundation of the world."

He had told the Children of Israel in the wilderness that they would be a peculiar treasure (which expression, in 1 Peter 2:9, means a purchased people). he was telling them He would die for them!

By God's own Law, given to Israel, once there was a divorce and the wife took another partner, the prior arrangement by the original two partners could never be re-entered into. So, there was no way that God and Israel

could be remarried and fulfill His plans to bring forth that Great Nation (His Kingdom Place) with the seed (Race) of Abraham.

Our God, our Husband, would leave His heavenly realm and throne, come to earth and be our Savior. He, the Godhead (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit) would become flesh. He would not send another to do this—he would come Himself to take our place. "Forasmuch as the children (of Israel, as sons of Adam) are partakers of flesh and blood, He also Himself likewise took part of the same; that through death He might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil."

Our Maker (Creator [114]), our Husband, our Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel, God of the whole earth—for this woman (Israel), the wife of youth whom he had forsaken and whom He had wrath toward, He would now show mercy and kindness to, and come to die in her place (the death she deserved), so she could be remarried to Him and bring forth His child, the Kingdom.

For us, He endured the shame of living in this realm the adversary told Christ "I own;" our Savior took their stripes for our healing, and our God bore the shame of the Cross, the pain and suffering, and he was in agony. "His sweat as it were great drops of blood." Such Love on the part of our Omnipotent God is beyond our comprehension. Oh, to be more like Him, to lay down our lives for our Friend. Abraham was called a Friend of God. Yahshua (YAH-God; SHUA-Savior) will be asked when he comes again about the wounds in His hands and He will say, "I was wounded in the house of my friends." This is Abraham's house, the children of Israel). We are the guilty race, the ones who caused those wounds. Jesus said, "I am not sent but unto The Lost Sheep of the House of Israel"...His wife. how grateful we are to our Shepherd.

Caiaphas, the High Priest of the Jews at the time of Jesus' trial, said, "Consider that it is expedient that one man die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not."

This is exactly what and why Jesus gave His life for us. Our Iniquity was laid on Him—the sheep had turned every one to his own way. Let us turn



from our own ways—to His; ask Him to come and heal us and our nation and to be our God and King. He said we would, in time, ask Him to do it for us. Now is the time to ask!

Two things were accomplished by our Savior's choice. He would offer hope and A WAY of escape (from bondage and death- eternally) for Adam's children. In Adam all die...in Christ are all (of Adam) made alive. Also, Christ would fulfill the requirements of the law for His remarriage to his wife, Israel.

One party to the original marriage had to die before there could be a remarriage. He gave Himself to make adulterous Israel a Virgin, a bride-to-be, that He, our Bridegroom (Israel's Bridegroom, not the church's), could marry and with whom He could bring forth His child, the Kingdom of God on earth [115]...it was the wife who now made herself ready. Her past sins are forgiven her.

Israel was under the Law. God took flesh and was made of a woman; under the Law, to redeem those under the Law. Only Israel was ever given the Law, but Christ very clearly stressed that He did not destroy the Law (by coming in the flesh). "Think not that I am come to destroy the Law or the prophets; I am not come to destroy but to fulfill," He said: "...not one jot or one tittle shall pass from the law, until all be fulfilled." A jot and tittle were the most minute marks in Hebrew. All will be fulfilled—all people will someday obey Him and His laws. The day will come when "Every knee shall bow to Him in heaven, on earth and under the earth."; "...unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear" (even angels chained under the earth). "Thy will be done on earth—as it is in heaven" will be realized one day. If our Lord and Master didn't win every soul, He would not be Omnipotent, but He is!

After Christ arose from the dead, he was seen by many. then, there came the day He left the earth and ascended into the heavens in a cloud. The angel said He would return in like manner (nothing said about His returning to the same place). Christians at the time of His Ascension were adding to His Body: "The Church" and afterwards.[116]

The same church (gahal) that was in the wilderness and had ritual service all pointed to Jesus, the Passover Lamb. It was a natural transition from Temple worship to Christianity. In fulfilment of Christ's prophecy.

Titus of Rome destroyed the Temple completely in 68 A.D. Its use was over. While the Christians were adding to the Church daily, the other faction, the "evil figs," (the Jews) who would not turn unto the Lord with their hearts, were busy persecuting the good figs: the Judahite Christians.

Paul said he had a thorn (son of Belial) in the flesh (a human), a messenger of Satan buffeting or persecuting him. The bad figs were, like Judas the apostle, being used to further "The Kingdom of God." They were cruel and earnestly attempting to destroy Christianity... even as they are today.

There are many manuscripts to verify the Christians were being driven out of Jerusalem and going as far west in the Isles of Britain as they could, Bishop Ussher, whose datings are used in most Bibles, wrote in the *Britannicarum Ecclesiarum Antiquitates*, "The British National Church was founded in 36 A.D., 160 years before Rome confessed Christianity. Britain was officially proclaimed Christian by King Lucius at the national Council at Winchester (in) 156 A.D." Many times the antiquity of the British Church was affirmed as being the first Christian group: at the Council of Pisa in 1417 A.D., the Council of Constance and the Council of Siena in 1423.

It was stated that the representative of the British Church took precedence in seating over the others, the Church having been founded by Joseph of Arimathea immediately after the Passion of Christ in 36 A.D.

Cardinal Baronius, the outstanding historian of the Roman Catholic Church, and curator of the Vatican Library, in his *Ecclesiastical Annals*, refers to the exodus of these Christians in 36 A.D., "In that year the Jews, in hatred, placed Joseph of Arimathea in a vessel without sail or oar."

Joseph was the uncle of Jesus Christ, burying Him in his own personal tomb, fulfilling the prophecy that "He (Christ) made His grave with the wicked and the rich in His death."

Cardinal Baronius quoted Mistral in Mireio, and another ancient document in the Vatican Library. He named many of the Christians who accompanied Joseph in his expulsion: Mary Magdalene, Martha and Lazarus (their brother whom Jesus raised from the dead), Mary, wife of Cleophas, Salome, the mother of James and John. James was slain by the sword, and those who were associated with him were thrust into the boat on the coast of Palestine in hopes they would drown.

Our Father had other plans for them! They would carry the Gospel of The Kingdom west to France and the British Isles...who waited upon Him...Using their shirts for sails, the boat drifted to the coast of Provence, France and, following the Rhone river, arrived at Aries.

Each of these Christians founded ministries among the Celts of Keltic language...the scattered 10 tribes of Israel.

Martha and Marcella, her handmaiden (who was with her when she died), went to Tarascon and Avignon, Martial to Limoges, Lazarus to Marseille, Maximin and Sidonius to Aix, and Mary Magdalene to St. Baume, where even today they show you the cave she lived in. Joseph of Arimathea, with the rest of the Christians, went to Glastonbury in the Isles of West Britain. As prophesied, these early Christians moved to these western areas "to renew their strength." The people already in the isles saw and feared these things. "Fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom." The isles waited for His Law and accepted Him. There is also documentation from early writers that, before the area was called Glastonbury, it was called the "Secretum Domini" (Secret of the Lord), and "Domus Dei" (Home of God). Alfred the Great (King in 871 A.D.), in the Anglo-Saxon Chronicles (can be seen in the British Museum) and William the Conqueror, who updated these records of land ownership in 1086 A.D., in what is called the "Domesday Book" (recently published and being sold to the public) states: "The Domus Dei is the great monastery of Glastonbury called the 'Secret of our Lord'. This Glastonbury church possesses in its own villis x 11 hides of land (1920 acres) which have never paid tax." [117]

Joseph is said to have arrived with eleven companions, and we read they erected round, thatched dwellings in a circle around a well. This well still

flows and is called The Chalice Well. It was from here they reached out and are accredited with winning so many to Jesus Christ, whom they had known in person. Though our erring Babylonian History tries to teach us that Caesar in 60 A.D., found the inhabitants of these isles, this is not borne out in documentation.

We have St. Augustine's letter to the Pope in contradiction. In 110 A.D., one of the Ptolemys of Egypt wrote, "The Britains of Our Lord's day were not barbarous. Each city had its university and there are 56 large cities."

Chrystom wrote, "With the acceptance of the new order of The Way, a great impetus was given to the erection of more seats of learning."

We know that Pontius Pilate attended school in Britain. The slogan over the entry of the Druidic universities was "What is truth?" Likely, this is the reason Pilate asked Jesus that very question. The Druids had a fabulous educational system and in very recent years at Stonehenge, Druid high priests have been found wearing the full regalia of the Hebrew High Priests. No human bones have ever been found, though those of animals have. The tales we have been told about the Druids is another Disinformation Ploy.

These seats of learning had monasteries and libraries. There are many manuscripts with such interesting and proving facts that are copies of material they had in the library at Glastonbury. Unfortunately, in the 1100's it burned. Even before Joseph and his party arrived, if you wanted to be a teacher or missionary, it was required (since they had no printing as we do) that one made their own copy of The Psalms to carry with them. Many went on to copy more of the old Scriptures. Much later, in the 8th and 9th centuries, we find the Irish Book of Kells which were Scriptures that had been copied in Latin and beautifully and colourfully decorated. They are preserved at Dublin's Trinity College.

The reasons for Glastonbury being called the "Horne of God" and "The Secret of The Lord" will be explored. It was from Glastonbury that British missionaries from the newly planted Christian



Church soon showed the virility of their church by invading Europe. The Romans invaded the British Isles in 58 A.D., and took Caractacus, the king, captive to Rome.

It was in their palace, the Titulus, that Paul and other disciples of Jesus Christ wrote much of our New Testament and converted these Britishers in Rome.

There was much interchange between Rome, France, Spain, Glastonbury and the rest of the British Isles, and many of the saints of our Bible ended their days in the monastery at Glastonbury, and are buried there. The stone crypt of Joseph of Arimathea can be seen today in St. John's Church in Glastonbury, under stained glass windows.

The importance of these revelations, and the reasons they have been concealed from us is due to the fact they prove there is no such thing as "Judeo-Christianity."

Christianity did not come out of Judaism as our study has shown, and we as Christians owe nothing to the Jews, except a thanks for pushing us out of Jerusalem, and Palestine on our way West to Britain, the Holy Place, on our way to that Great Nation, that Kingdom place Jesus Christ went away to get, and then return—to the Holy of Holies, in America, where very soon, now, we shall meet our High Priest, face to face.

### **Question: What Is the Covenant of Marvels?**

**Answer:** The Lord then informed Moses He would make another covenant with His People.

"And he said, Behold, I make a covenant: before all thy people I will do marvels, such as have not been done in all the earth, nor in any nation..."  
[118]

This was to be a Covenant of Marvels, for He promised that all the people would see the works of the Lord, for terrible things would be done for Israel's sake.

This is a very interesting covenant for in it is included the promise of the inspiration and revelations which came to the prophets of Israel as they foretold the marvellous plans of God and their latter day fulfilments. The coming of the Messiah (Jesus) was predicted by the prophets and the time of His coming revealed. The great promises regarding the expansion of the Kingdom were also revealed to Israel through the prophets.

### **Question: Who Was the First King of Israel, for It Was Not Saul?**

**Answer:** Many will find it hard to believe, but Israel had a King before Saul. He was the son of one of the Judges: Gideon.

The story is related in the eighth and ninth chapter of the Book of Judges. "And Gideon had threescore and ten sons.—And his concubine that was in Shechem, she also bare him a son, whose name he called Abimelech." [119] Then Abimelech is made king of at Shechem: "And all the men of Shechem gathered together, and all the house of Millo, and went, and made Abimelech King, by the plain of the pillar that was Shechem." [120]

### **Question: What Was the Great Physical Disaster Commemorated in the Naming of Peleg?**

**Answer:** Joktan's brother was Peleg and he received his name to commemorate a great disaster that occurred in his days: "—for in his days was the earth divided—"[121]

His name signifies a division of land by water. Reference is thus made to the great seismic disturbance that caused the disappearance of the continent given the name of Atlantis. The two hemispheres were formed at that time. Prior to Peleg's day, men spread over the earth by way of connecting land and islands in the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. The division of the land by water cut off further communication.

Peleg means "division" and the Hebrew word translated "divided" is Peleg or, as the celebrated Biblical critic Bengelius has pointed out, it is NePeLeGe, meaning a division of the earth by water. In the naming of Peleg we have reference to a physical division applicable to land and water.

Shortly after the confusion of tongues which occurred in the days of Cush and Nimrod, the earth became divided, or split asunder, and the Atlantic Ocean covered what formerly was land connecting Africa with the Americas.

History furnishes fragmentary evidence that such a disaster did occur. Plato, in his Dialogue called Temaeus, records such a disaster. He makes mention of a vast tract of land beyond the pillars of Hercules (Gibraltar) which was swallowed up in the ocean by a great earthquake. This fact was introduced by Plato, as related by Solon (one of the first seven wise men of Greece), who, while in Egypt, he heard it from an old Egyptian priest in a discourse with him regarding ancient events.

The history of this famous island was given as follows: "There was formerly an island at the entrance of the Ocean, where the pillars of Hercules stand (and so beyond the then supposed bounds of Europe and Africa). This island was larger than all Libya and Asia; and from it was an easy passage to many islands; and from these islands to all that continent which was opposite and next to the true sea (the Pacific Ocean) —In after times there happened a dreadful earthquake, and an inundation of water, which continued for the space of a whole day and night, and this island Atlantis being covered and overwhelmed by the waves, sank beneath the ocean and so disappeared."

### **Question: Who Was Job?**

**Answer:** The Genealogy from Noah to Abraham is traced through Shem to Terah, Abraham's father. Abraham was the tenth generation from Noah, as Noah was the tenth from Adam. Moses departed from his usual custom of recording only the line of Abraham, who was in the direct line of the

appointed seed, and gives the sons of Joktan, the brother of Peleg. The reason for this is apparent in the name of Joktan's thirteenth son. That son was Jobab.

"And Ophir, and Havilah, and Jobab: all these were the sons of Joktan." [122] Now "ab" means father, so Moses has given us the genealogy of "Father Job," a son of Joktan. The experiences of Job, as recorded in the oldest book of the Bible, the Book of Job, are authenticated by Moses, who tells us who Job was in Genesis 10:29.

### **Question: How Old Was Jacob When He Obtained the Birthright Blessing from Esau?**

**Answer:** It is of interest to know Jacob's age at this time.

He has been represented by some as being a young man of eighteen or twenty years of age. This, however, is not the story the Bible tells. Jacob and Esau were twins. Some time before this Esau had married at the age of forty. Working backward, the age of Jacob can be determined. When Jacob stood before Pharaoh some years later he was one hundred and thirty years old. Joseph at that time was thirty-nine years old and Jacob was therefore ninety-one years old when Joseph was born.

Joseph was born at the end of the fourteen-year period of Jacob's service for his two wives. Thus Jacob was seventy-seven years old when he began that service. This was right after he arrived at Laban's home, where he fled because Esau had vowed he would kill him. Jacob was, therefore, about Seventy-Six Years old when he deceived his father and received the blessing instead of Esau, which caused him to flee for his life.

### **Question: Why Does History Reveal That the Outcroppings of the Giant Strain Appear Only in the Line of Ham?**

**Answer:** When the twelve spies, sent to spy out the Land of Canaan [123], returned and reported to Moses what they had seen.



They reported, "And there we saw the giants, the sons of Anak, which came of the giants: and we were in our own sight as grasshoppers, and so we were in their sight." [124]

In an article in Destiny Magazine, Titled Giants of the Darkness, it was pointed out the offspring of fallen angels, who had taken wives of the daughters of men, were the giants of the antediluvian days, called the Nephilim.

Their existence and those who had contaminated their blood by mixing the races, made it necessary for God to destroy the world by the waters of a flood in order to bring their rule over men to an end and to save the human race from complete corruption.

But if the giants were destroyed by the flood (we will show later that the entire earth was not destroyed by the flood, where did the giants that the spies saw in Canaan come from? It has been pointed out by many Bible Scholars that it is only in the line of Ham that we find the outcroppings of this giant strain.

The reason is attributed to the fact that his (Ham's) mother was not the mother of either Japheth or Shem but was the wife whom Noah had at the time of the Deluge. And in her veins was the taint of the mutation that had occurred previously and thus, in Ham's descendants, we have a throwback to the giants of antediluvian times. The Appendixes of The Companion Bible offer additional information of special interest relative to this subject. A portion of Appendix 23 relates: "That there was a fall of the angels is certain from Jude 6, 'And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.' [125] The nature of their fall is clearly stated in this same verse.

They left their own habitation (oiketerion). This word occurs only in 2 Corinthians 5:2 and Jude 6, where it is used of the spiritual (or resurrected) body. The nature of their sin is stated to be 'in like manner' to that of the subsequent sins of Sodom and Gomorrah. 'Even as Sodom and Gomorrah,

and the cities about them—giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example...' [126]

The time of their fall is given as having taken place 'in the days of Noah.' [127] though there may have been a prior fall which caused the end of 'the world that then was.' [128] For this sin they are 'reserved unto judgment,' [129] and are 'in prison.' [130] Their progeny, in size and character, had to be destroyed. This was the one and only object of the flood. Only Noah and his family had preserved their pedigree pure from Adam.

All the rest had become 'corrupt' (Shachath) destroyed (as Adamites). The only remedy was to destroy it (de facto), as it had become destroyed (de jure)...this irruption of fallen angels was Satan's first attempt to prevent the coming of the Seed of the woman foretold in Genesis 3:15. If this could be accomplished, God's Word would have failed, and his own doom (Satan's) would be averted."

In Appendix 25 the following observations are made: "But we read of the Nephilim again in Numbers 13:33: 'And there we saw the giants, the sons of Anak, which come, of the giants...' How, it may be asked, could this be, if they were all destroyed in the flood? The answer is contained in: 'There were giants in the earth in those days: and also after that...' [131] There were Nephilim in the earth in those days (i.e., in the days of Noah); and also after that—'after that,' i.e., after the Flood, there was a second irruption of these fallen angels, evidently small in number and more limited in area, for they were for the most part confined to Canaan, and were in fact known as 'nations of Canaan.' It was for the destruction of these, that the sword of Israel was necessary, as the Flood had been before. As to the date of this second irruption, it was evidently soon after it became known that the seed was to come through Abraham; for, when he came out from Haran [132] and entered Canaan, the significant fact is stated: '—And the Canaanite was then (already) in the land.' [133] And in Genesis 14:5 they were already known as 'Rephaim' and 'Emim' and had established themselves at Ashterath Karnaim and Shaveh Kiriathaim.

In chapter 15 of Genesis they are enumerated and named among Canaanite peoples: 'Kenites, and the Kenizzites and the Kadmonites, and the Hittites,

and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims, and the Amorites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites.'

These were to be cut off, and driven out, and utterly destroyed. But Israel failed in this and we know not how many got away to other countries to escape the general destruction. If this were recognized...As Rephaim they were well known, and are often mentioned: but, unfortunately, instead of this, their proper name being preserved, it is variously translated as 'dead,' 'deceased,' or 'giants.'"

### **Question: An Angel Talked with Abraham about Sodom and Gomorrah: Who Was That Angel?**

**Answer:** This is an interesting question to consider; who the Angel was with whom Abraham talked.

He was one of three strangers who had visited Abraham that day. Two of the men had gone on to Sodom and Gomarrha, but the third remained to talk with Abraham. He was spokesman for the three and He is referred to as the Angel of the Lord. Abraham also addressed Him as the "Judge of all the Earth" [134] so this Angel Could be none other than Jesus Christ our Savior in His Angelic Form.

### **Question: How Does the Bible Differ from All Other Literature?**

**Answer:** There are many who condemn the Bible because it records facts without favouritism. The Bible gives the virtues but also lists the sins of men and nations. It even records the evil acts and sins in the lives of its heroes. It never condones sin, but states the facts and shows the terrible end of individuals and nations who persist in doing evil. Thus, the Bible differs from all other literature in this respect.

### **Question: The Bible Relates That Angels Appear and Disappear. Is There an Explanation for Their Seeming Invisibility?**

**Answer:** The Bible relates that an Angel "Appeared" to Gideon [135] and told him that he was a "Mighty Man of Valour" and that God was going to use him to free his people "Israel."

The atheist, agnostic and many so-called "Ministers," because they have accepted the doctrines of modernism, disbelieve the account of the appearing and disappearing of such Beings as the Angel of the Lord (They are even so spiritually blind and stupid as to deny the Virgin Birth of the Lord Jesus Christ!).

Also, they discount the statements of the New Testament that Jesus Christ did the same thing. When His disciples touched Him they found His body to be flesh and bone. "How can substance become visible and invisible at will?" Ask the atheist, agnostic and modernist "Ministers" and all others who will not accept the witness of the Scriptures. This question was being pondered one day when an electric fan was observed with its fan blades revolving at high speed. It was noticed that the steel blades of the fan were invisible to the naked eye: in fact, it was possible to see through them to objects beyond the fan as though the fan blades did not exist. Yet, obviously, the fan blades were right there in place all the while. This, without doubt, was an interesting demonstration of a solid substance that was in existence but invisible to the human eye.

Thus, rapidity of movement, either continuous or vibratory, would have the effect of making the object which was moving invisible. On the other hand, the blades of a rapidly whirling fan can be instantly made visible to the human eye by the rhythmic flashing of light in step with the speed of the blades. To all intents and purposes, the blades would appear to be at rest though they would actually still be revolving at a high rate of speed. Thus with this simple demonstration poses the interesting question as to whether the difference in vibration between terrestrial and celestial objects and beings accounts for the fact that angels can be present yet invisible to man.

Is it also possible that, either by slowing the rate of vibration or by focusing a light tuned to the rhythm of the celestial being upon him, visibility to

human beings is brought about? The removal of the vibratory light, which men may not necessarily be aware exists at the time he sees the celestial being, would immediately make him invisible in the same way that the angel of the Lord became invisible to Gideon and others.

## **Question: What Happened When Israel Crossed The Red Sea?**

**Answer:** As Moses led the Children of Israel out of Egypt, they saw the army of Pharaoh coming in the distance, they were terribly afraid and cried out to the Lord. They asked Moses why he had brought them out into the wilderness to die, when they could have died in peace in Egypt. [136]

They reminded Moses that they had told him to let them alone so that they might serve the Egyptians. That would have been better than to die as they now expected to do at the hands of Pharaoh's army. Moses told the people not to fear but to stand still and see the salvation of the Lord. "...for the Egyptians whom ye have seen today, ye shall see them again no more for ever." [137]

The Lord told Moses to speak to the Children of Israel and commend them to go forward. Moses was told to stretch out his hand over the sea and the Children of Israel were to pass dry-shod through the midst of the sea. That Pharaoh and his army would follow them and be overthrown in the midst of the sea.

What happened to the waters of the Red Sea? In the song of Moses commemorating the destruction of the hosts of Pharaoh this statement appears: "And with the blast of thy nostrils the waters were gathered together, the floods stood upright as an heap, and the depths were congealed in the heart of the sea." [138]

The Hebrew word translated "congealed" is GAPHA and means "to be congealed" or "to thicken -- hardened." [139] Which is in conformity with the statement by Job who said: "By the breath of God frost is given: and the breadth of the waters is straitened." [140]

Across the dry floor of the sea Israel passed to safety, for the water was as hard as stone to them, as Job graphically expresses it: "Out of whose womb came the ice? and the hoary frost of heaven, who hath gendered it? The waters are hid as with a stone, and the face of the deep is frozen." [141]

The Angel of the Lord, who had gone before the camp of Israel, now went behind them; and the pillar of the cloud was behind them, between them and Pharaoh's army. It was a cloud of darkness to the Egyptians, but it gave light by night to Israel.

They did not come near each other all night. "...so that the one came not near the other all the night." [142] When Moses stretched out his hand over the sea and a strong east wind blew all that night. This brought about the "dry" condition of the floor of the sea; and the sides and the surface of the sea became frozen (congealed).

The waters on both sides of Israel were a wall of protection to them (Just as the Atlantic and Pacific were a wall to foreign lands, until in the 20th century, when their protection fell, just as it did in the days of the Exodus. The expression "wall" could readily refer to the open expanses of water beyond the frozen (congealed) section over which Israel passed to safety. And the open expanses of water would prevent the Egyptians from moving upon either flank of the Israel columns as they moved across the dry ground. "I led you through the Sea, and in the beginning gave you a large and safe passage..." [143] It should be noted here that for 2 to 3 million people, which is what the number of the Children of Israel has been estimated to have been; and for them and all their belongings and animals, to pass through the sea in one nights time: Then the passage must have been no less than five miles wide.

It is also very likely that, under the pressure of the wind and water, the ice on the edges of the frozen section of the sea would break into large cakes and slide upon the surface ice, and thus piling up on the frozen surface of the sea.

This has been seen to occur many times in the spring as the edges of an ice field have broken up under similar pressures. In this way the waters would indeed be a wall of defence on each side. And the cloud acted as a rear guard to the Israelites and, while it brought darkness upon the Egyptians, it gave light to Israel as they passed, dry-shod through the sea.

Because the sea was frozen on each side, this would explain why the Egyptian Army would follow the Israelites through the sea. But they did not know or understand the power of God.

For the next morning the Lord looked upon the Egyptians and brought confusion into their ranks and took off the wheels of their chariots. Then the Egyptians said: "...Let us flee from the face of Israel; for the Lord fighteth for them..." [144]

Moses was then told to stretch forth his hand over the sea and the waters returned to their original liquid condition again. At which time the army of Pharaoh that pursued Israel into the sea was inundated and it appears that not one of them survived.

### **Question: How Did Jephthah Keep His Vow, yet He Did Not Slay His Daughter?**

**Answer:** The Spirit of the Lord came upon Jephthah and he went out against Ammon. As he prepared for battle, he vowed a vow to the Lord, saying: "—If thou shalt without fail deliver the children of Ammon into mine hands, The it shall be, that whatsoever cometh forth of the doors of my house to meet me, when I return—surely be the Lord's, and I will offer it up for a burn offering." [145]

Jephthah fought against the Ammonites and the Lord delivered them into his hands. He destroyed twenty of their cities and killed many of them. After his victory he returned home and, as he went toward his house, his daughter came out to meet him with tumbrels and dancing with joy.

She Was His Only Child: They loved each other very much, which becomes obvious later: And, when Jephthah saw his daughter approaching, he rent his clothes, exclaiming: "Alas, my daughter! thou hast brought me

very low, and thou art one of them that trouble me: for I have opened my mouth unto the Lord, and I cannot go back." [146]

In a demonstration of her love for her daddy; She replied that if he had made a promise to the Lord (Thus demonstrating, also, her faith and love for God), he must do what he had vowed. Whereupon, he told her what his vow was and she made one request that he would grant her two months grace to wander upon the mountains with her companions and bewail her maidenhood among the hills.

Jephthah told her to go. When the two months were ended, she returned home and he carried out his vow, doing as he had promised the Lord. However, much false and erroneous teaching as to how this vow was carried out, has led many to believe that Jephthah actually offered up his daughter as a burnt offering to the Lord. But this is contrary to the facts and is against God's Word and against all Scriptural Teaching and against God's Laws!

Jephthah's vow was:

- 1). That whatever came forth from the door of his house to meet him should be the Lord's.
- 2). That he would offer it up for a burnt offering. Obviously, since it was Jephthah's daughter who came out first to greet her victorious father, to carry out the second clause of the vow would violate the first clause since no human sacrifice was acceptable to the Lord.

The Lord would/did, however, accept the sacrifice of a life dedicated to His service. What actually happened was that Jephthah was compelled to dedicate his daughter to the service of the Lord in accordance with the first declaration of his vow.

The statement "and she knew no man" clearly indicates she did not suffer death, as a sacrifice, but rather that her life was dedicated to the Lord. She herself consented to that service and was never married. The account



declares that the daughters of Israel went to lament the daughter of Jephthah once a year for four days.

The Hebrew word "tanah" translated "to lament" means "attributing honor - to celebrate" (#8567 Strong's Concordance) Having taken the vow of a virgin, once a year the daughters of Israel paid a four-day visit to Jephthah's daughter and communed with her and to "attribute honor and celebrate" her sacrifice. Such a vow as this is provided for in Leviticus 27. Paul refers to the faith of Jephthah[147] who willingly kept his vow even though the dedication of his only child to the service of the Lord meant the discontinuation of his family line.

### **Question: Does the Song of Solomon 1:5-6, Tell Us That One of Solomon's Wives Was a Negro?**

**Answer:** No! It does not!

These verses read: "I am black, but comely, O ye daughters of Jerusalem, as the tents of Kedar, as the curtains of Solomon. Look not upon me, because I am black, because the sun hath looked upon me; my mother's children were angry with me; they made me the keeper of the vineyards; but mine own vineyards have I not kept."

No this woman was not a Negro. Compare her with "Cinderella." In verse 6 she tells us why she was "black." "because the sun hath looked upon me." In other words, she had a "healthy tan," which back then was considered to be the mark of a low-class working girl. The word "black" is from the Hebrew word shachowr which means "dusky or swarthy."

Notice that verse 6 explains that she was blackened by the sun, because her brothers made her take care of their vineyards, and she could not take care of her own (that is, herself, her complexion).

### **Question: Is Interracial Marriages Forbidden in the Bible?**

**Answer:** Yes it does!

God was/is a Segregationist: "When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated (segregated) the sons of Adam (man), He set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel." [148]

All the prophets and almost every book of the Old Testament discusses the subject of segregation. They spoke for God Who is a "segregationist." The Old Testament is not the only Scripture where segregation is taught. It is emphasized in the New Testament, also. In fact, it is one of the major subjects of the Bible. Jesus asked, "...Have ye understood all these things?" His listeners said "Yes." Then He said to them, "...every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old." [149]

In other words, since the advent of Christ, if one is instructed by God, that person must use both the New Testament as well as the Old Testament. Which is simply another name for the "old covenant" and the "new covenant." Luke wrote: "God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood [150] all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation." [151]

Thus it is clear for all to see. God created all mankind, all the different races, and set the boundaries of their habitation. History also shows that none of the races, Except The White Man, has ever moved out of their assigned place on earth, except in times of war or natural disasters - such as flood, famine and etc. And even then, they would immediately return, unless hindered or kept from it by some external force. There are no scriptures which annul this statement, or that God ever intended for those boundaries to be set aside. No! God intended for every race to stay within their allotted boundaries, they were never to mix with the other races. God intended for the races to be segregated! 2 Corinthians 6:17 further verifies

it: "Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord..."

Paul wrote: "For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope." [152]

Let us, therefore, reflect upon God's directives for our well being. On one occasion, Christ cried out and told His adversaries, the Jews: "I am come in my Father's name, and ye (Jews) receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? Do not think that I WILL accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye (say you) trust. (But you lie) For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?" [153]

So Moses has accused, in his writings, of those who would refuse to accept and believe what he had written to direct us on the road of peace and salvation. "The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken." [154]

Then for a second witness let us turn to the Book of Acts, where Peter stated: "For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall he hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you." [155] Stephen, in what was apparently his one and only sermon, stated: "This that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear." [156] Segregation of the races is proven to be the everlasting Law of Almighty God. "And he said, Behold, I make a covenant: before all thy people I will do marvels, such as have not been done in all the earth, nor in any nation—

Observe thou that which I command thee this day: behold, I drive out before thee the Amorite, and the Canaanite, and the Hittite, and the Perizzite, and the Hivite, and the Jebusite. Take heed to thyself, lest thou

make a covenant with the inhabitants of the land whither thou goest, lest it be for a snare in the midst of thee—Lest thou make a covenant with the inhabitants of the land.—And thou take of their daughters unto thy sons, and their daughters..." [157] Here we see that God "Commanded" our forefathers not to mix with the Amorites, Canaanites, Hittites, Perizzites, Hivites and the Jebusites. In other words God commanded our White Race to not mix with the other Races! Now there are those who will falsely state that the Laws of God, as contained in the Old Testament, have been done away with.

But Jesus shows them to be liars and false teachers. For He said: "Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the (words of the) prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven." [158]

Christ came to abide by the law; to carry it out; to make it active; to accomplish all of God's Holy plan and purpose with regard to man. Already, we can clearly see Segregation was, and is, the Law of Almighty God! "All the ways of a man are clean in his own eyes; but the Lord weigheth the spirits. Commit thy works unto the Lord, and thy thoughts shall be established. The Lord hath made all things for himself: yea, even the wicked for the day of evil. Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord: though hand join in hand, he shall not be unpunished. By mercy and truth iniquity is purged: and by the fear of the Lord men depart from evil." [159]

And God also said: "I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live." [160]

Thank God, along with me, that He sent Christ to this earth the future home of His Kingdom, in the flesh to die; be buried; raised again; and now sits at the right hand of Almighty God, and is our only Savior and Redeemer, who led our ancestors, the White Race, the Anglo-Saxon, Germanic, Celtic, Scandinavian, and kindred people of the earth, out of bondage.

For making His Word available to us for study and instruction. That: If, at any time, we can find knowledge and answers for our troubled minds, souls and country. It is God, who left His Words as directives. We should also be thankful that God will hear our cry, if we will repent and seek His face. His words are to segregate. With the warning: "Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the Lord your God..." [161]

If they do, Christ has given a further warning: "For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book." [162]

The Bible is a testimony that it is God's law to be separate, to be segregated. If those who advocate or participate in integration when segregation was written into the blood covenant of the Law of God; if they would seek the Scriptures, they would read what a punishment they will receive if they do not repent. "Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself therewith: neither shall any woman stand before a beast (Negro) to like down thereto: it is confusion." [163]; "And if a man lie with a beast (Negro woman), he shall surely be put to death: and ye shall slay the beast. And if a woman approach unto any beast (Negro), and lie down thereto, thou shalt kill the woman, and the beast: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them." [164]

God does not recognize mixed seeds: "A bastard [165] shall not enter into the congregation of the Lord; even to his tenth generation shall he not

enter into the congregation of the Lord. An Ammonite or Moabite shall not enter into the congregation of the Lord; even to their tenth generation shall they not enter into the congregation of the Lord for ever." [166]

Any person born from a mixed union, such as Ishmael was not recognized as a Hebrew, nor was he recognized by God as Abraham's lawful son, even though he was Abraham's first born. We read in Genesis: "...now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou has not withheld thy son (Isaac) thine only son from me." [167]

Isaac was seventeen years old when this happened, and Ishmael, Abraham's first born was living and was about thirty-four years old at that time. [168] This, clearly shows, that God does not and did not recognize mixed seeds (mixed breeds).

The reason Abraham was not put to death, when he made the union with the Egyptian woman, was because at that time in history the Egyptians were White people and not Negroes. We must remember, we the White Race are Israelites, if we are pure white. If one could not prove that they were an Israelite (pure white man/woman) they were cast out of the priesthood and not allowed to serve God at the altar.

"And he that is the high priest among his brethren, upon whose head the anointing oil was poured, and that is consecrated to put on the garments—shall take a virgin of his own people to wife. Neither shall he profane his seed (mix his seed with other races) among his people..." [169] Here again is the distinction of our seed. We see references to various mixtures. Remember that the White Race is now called Caucasians, but were known before by nationality and even earlier as Israelites. But when Israel sinned against God and He divorced her, they were not allowed to be called Israelites (meaning ruling with God), so their name of Israel was lost to them and they became known by other names; i.e., Germans, Englishmen, Frenchmen, Dutch, Americans, Canadians and etc.

God Forbids Mixing of the Races: Many people have been led to think that the tree of knowledge was just some sort of fruit tree. It was not. Adam and Eve already had knowledge and were on verbal speaking terms with

God. Therefore, by eating of the tree, they could only gain a knowledge of evil. It was called the tree of the knowledge of Good and Evil and not just a tree of knowledge.

But with a study Ezekiel 31 we find that the trees spoken of in the Garden of Eden/the Garden of God were people, not wooden trees.

### **Strange as It May Seem, but: At Least a Portion of the Trees Spoken of in the Garden of Eden Were People!**

What were the Trees in the Garden of Eden? Our people have been taught for over 100 years that Adam and Eve ate an apple or some sort of fruit from the tree of good and evil which was in the midst of the Garden of Eden. That Adam and Eve were the father and mother of all the various races, yet the Bible proves they are lying through their teeth. It is very possible many of them believe that story themselves, because that was what they were taught; however there are a very large number of Judeo-Christian Preachers today who know that is false, but will not teach the truth because they are wolves in sheeps' clothing, teaching that Christ is Christ but are working secretly to destroy the Word of God; to destroy the knowledge of Christ, Christianity from the people and to destroy Christians at some future date, under laws which have been secretly passed which will allow The Execution of Christians in America! Laws such as Public Law 102-14.

But the truth of the matter is that the trees spoken of in the Garden of Eden were People! not trees such as the Pear, Apple, Orange, Pecan and etc. They were people. Right about now you are thinking; "All right smart Alec prove it." So we will attempt to do so. Although we do so with the full knowledge that no one can be convinced of anything if they do not wish to accept facts when they are given. For example, there was a man in Dallas about 25 years ago who said he would give anyone \$1-million dollars if they could prove to him that the moon was not made out of green cheese. Well many tried, they took him books, papers, pictures and even some rocks that came from the surface of the moon; but no one could ever convince him that the moon was not made of green cheese because he

would not accept anything they presented. So he never had to pay the \$1-million to anyone.

Please turn with us to the book of Ezekiel; to chapter 31 where we read: "And it came to pass—that the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, speak unto Pharaoh king of Egypt, and to his multitude; Whom art thou like in thy greatness? Behold, the Assyrian was a cedar (a tree) in Lebanon with fair branches, and with a shadowing shroud, and of an high stature; and his top was among the thick boughs.

The waters made him great, the deep set him up on high with her rivers running round about his plants, and sent out her little rivers unto all the trees (people) of the field. Therefore his height was exalted above all the trees (people) of the field, and his boughs were multiplied, and his branches became long because of the multitude of waters, when he shot forth. All the fowls of heaven made their nests in his boughs, and under his branches did all the beasts of the field bring forth their young, and under his shadow dwelt all great nations (countries).

Thus was he fair in his greatness, in the length of his branches; for his foot was by great waters. (Now we change and go to the Garden of Eden) The cedars (people) in the Garden of God could not hide him: the fir trees (people) were not like his boughs (See the comparison, thus we know that there were other people there to compare with him), and the chestnut trees (their children - or people) were not like his branches (his children - or people); nor any tree in the Garden of God was like unto him in his beauty (See we know the trees in the Garden were people because they were not like the Assyrian in beauty - because they were of a different colour, they were not White. That is not racist it is simply a fact, even if you don't like it. For God has never cared what we like or don't like when He speaks, we either accept it or reject it to our hurt). I have made him fair (White) by the multitude of his branches: so that all the trees (people) of Eden; that were in the Garden of God, envied him (trees cannot envy each other, only people can do that). Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Because thou hast lifted up thyself in height, and he hath shot up his top among the thick boughs, and his heart (trees do not have hearts) lifted up in his height;



I have therefore delivered him (Now God is speaking of Adam) into the hand of the mighty one of the heathen: he shall surely deal with him: I have driven him out (Driven Adam out of the Garden of Eden, because of his disobedience to Almighty God) for his wickedness. And strangers (people of other races), the terrible of the nations, have cut him off and have left him: upon the mountains and in all the valleys his branches (See he is again comparing him with a tree) are fallen by all the rivers of the land; and all the people of the earth are gone down from his shadow, and have left him (Here is were the departing of the various races left the Garden of God—

The Garden of Eden and were scattered all across the earth, away from Adam and his people. Thus God segregated the races from each other, so they could not mix; which is against God's Law of Kind after Kind). Upon his ruin shall all the fowls of the heaven remain, and all the beasts of the field shall be upon his branches (Here God is saying that Adam's children would always be attracted to the black race - The Beast of the Earth);

To the end that none of all the trees by the waters exalt themselves for their height, neither shoot up their top among the thick boughs, neither their trees stand up in their height, all that drink water: for they are all delivered unto death (All mankind will die because of Adam's sin), to the nether parts of the earth (In other words all people everywhere, no matter what race would die in their time), in the midst of the children of men, with them that go down to the pit (grave). Thus saith the Lord God; In the day when he (Adam) went down to the grave (pit) I caused a mourning: I covered the deep for him, and I restrained the floods thereof, and the great waters were stayed: and I caused Lebanon to mourn for him, and all the trees (people) of the field fainted (Here again trees do not faint, only people do that) for him. I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall (When Adam fell all the various races and nations on earth knew of his fall and shook with fear and sadness), when I cast him down to hell (the grave) with them that descend into the pit; and all the trees of Eden (people), the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, shall be comforted (Here again trees cannot be comforted) in the neither parts of the earth.

They also went down into hell (the grave) with him unto them that be slain with the sword (In other words everyone will die and go to the grave); and they that were his arm, that dwelt under his shadow in the midst of the heathen (Here we are told that the trees of the Garden were people of other races, other than Adam who was a White Man, like it or not, love it or not).

To whom art thou thus like in glory and in greatness among the trees (people) of Eden? yet shalt thou be brought down with the trees (people) of Eden unto the nether parts of the earth; thou shalt lie in the midst of the uncircumcised with them that be slain by the sword. (Now God goes back to Pharaoh whom He is comparing Adam and the Assyrians with) This is Pharaoh and all his multitude, saith the Lord God." [170]

We know that the Pharaoh did not go into the Garden of Eden, because there were no such thing as Pharaoh until about a thousand years later. Other places in Scriptures where men are described as trees are as follows: Leviticus 26:4, 20; Deuteronomy 28:40, 42; Judges 9:8-15; 1 Kings 4:33; 2 King 3:25; 1 Chronicles 16:33; Psalm 96:2; Isaiah 7:2; 10:18; 14:8; 55:12; 61:3; Ezekiel 17:24; 31; Hosea 2:12; Joel 1:12; Zechariah 1:8; 4:4-12; Matthew 3:10; 8:24; Luke 3:9; 21:29; Jude 11:12; Revelation 7:3; 11:4.

There are others but they are hard to dig out and takes much study to see that the trees, vines and etc., are indeed people. It is a documented fact that when God created the earth He made ALL green herbs and trees with seed according to their own kind. As God says in Genesis 1:11-12: "And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good." Therefore, it is well established that all things created by God were pure unmixed and good. If two unlike trees are grafted, the fruit produced is not according to either of the two good trees and is mixed, impure and therefore evil because God forbids it. God further clarifies this in His Law which never changes: "Ye

shall keep my statutes. Thou shalt not let thy cattle gender with diverse kind: thou shalt not sow thy field with mingled (mixed) seed(s)..." [171]

This clearly shows that God forbids the mixing of anything, even cattle. God never breaks His own Law, therefore Satan, not God, was the creator of the integrated tree of mixed races and species of all kinds. God said again: "And out of the ground made the Lord God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil." [172]

This may sound repetitious, but God said He brought forth all manner of trees to be eaten. If He, God, made the integrated tree, He would have broken His own Law. God does neither. Remember it took two good trees made by God, to be grafted by Satan to make it good and evil. It was good because in its original creation it was made in purity by God. But when Satan grafted them, it became evil, because God forbids any mixing of seeds, be it tree, animal or man. As Jesus said in Matthew 7:18: "A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt (mixed) tree bring forth good fruit."

The fruit of the integrated tree was evil and likewise the tree itself was evil. It was not created by God because God created only pure trees, animals and men. This evil tree created by Satan was impure and mixed.

What happens when a tree is integrated, or mixed? You die. Jesus Christ came and suffered the most horrible, unmerciful type of death, known at the hand of the Jews, as He suffered as a result of the Sin of Adam and Eve.

Herod was on the Throne in Palestine: In the days of Christ, Herod, an Edomite-Shelah-Judah Jew, was on the throne in Palestine. He was not an Israelite. The Pharisees and Sadducees were in absolute control of the temple and the Sanhedrin. They were not the lawful descendants of the Tribe of Levi. They did not follow the law of Moses, although they claimed to do so. Instead they set up their own Babylonian traditions, Traditions of the Elders, later to become known as the Jewish Talmud.

Following is how the Pharisees came to be in "Moses' Seat" when Christ was born. They had many enemies at the beginning and the Sadducees were the first of these enemies. They were the constant opponents of the Pharisees and their imported Babylonian paganism, misrepresented by the Pharisees as the Tradition of the Pharisees as the Tradition of the Elders, the "Oral Law" ostensibly transmitted privately to Moses and on down, superseding anything written in the Bible.

In the six years of civil war between the Pharisees and Alexander Jannaeus, King and High Priest of Jerusalem, 50,000 were killed on both sides before this Sadducean ruler succumbed, and his widow Salome turned affairs over to the Pharisees in 79 B.C. Her brother, Simon ben Shetah, had been waiting for such an opportunity. The continued civil war resulted in the sons of Alexander Jannaeus, Hyrcanus and Aristobulus, in 63 B.C., going hat in hand to Pompey, Caesar's Roman General in Syria, asking him to invade Palestine and slaughter their respective opponents. This is how Rome happened to be in power when Christ was born. The full story can be found in the Jewish Encyclopaedia under "Pharisees."

The Ark of the Covenant and the Shekinah glory had long since disappeared from the Holiest of Holies. There was no supernatural cloud to guide them by day nor a pillar of fire to guide them by night. God's presence had left the temple and Jerusalem in Ezekiel's day. "Moreover the spirit lifted me up, and brought me unto the east gate of the Lord's house (The Temple in Jerusalem), which looketh eastward: and behold at the door of the gate five and twenty men—Then said he (God) unto me, Son of man, these are the men that devise mischief, and give wicked counsel in this city—Son of man, thy brethren, even thy brethren, the men of thy kindred, and all the house of Israel wholly, are they unto whom the inhabitants of Jerusalem have said, Get you far from the Lord: unto us is this land given in possession—Then did the Cherubims lift up their wings, and the wheels beside them; and the glory of the God of Israel was over them above. And the glory of the Lord went up from the midst of the city, and stood upon the mountain which is on the east side of the city. Afterwards the spirit took me up, and brought me in a vision by the Spirit of God into Chaldee, to them of the captivity.

So the vision that I had seen went up from me. Then I spake unto them of the captivity (The ten tribes which had been taken captive by Assyria -- By this we know, God was not talking of the Children of Israel when He said 'these are the men that devise mischief, and give wicked counsel in this city!' we know God was speaking of the Jews!) all the things that the Lord had shewed me." [173]

There were seven in succession in that Herodian dynasty. This false and spurious Herodian Kingdom also controlled the Temple and the High Priesthood which had been turned into a political office. As a result, there was a constant political battle for the high priesthood.

When Christ came into the world, he did not recognize that false kingdom and would have nothing to do with that spurious priesthood and so-called "Jews' religion." He did not join the Pharisees, the Scribes, the Sadducees, nor any so-called Jewish sect or political party. He lived and taught entirely outside the establishment.

Herod the Great was determined to kill Christ during the first two years of his life, and all of the kings who succeeded Herod wanted to kill Him also. With few exceptions, the high priests, the Sanhedrin and council also want to kill Him. One exception was Zacharias the priest who was the father of John the Baptist. He was a true priest and a descendant of Aaron and was murdered also by the Jews.[174]

It would appear there were only a few thousand people in Jerusalem and all of Palestine in the days of Christ who were of the Tribe of Judah along with remnants of the other twelve tribes, but they were outside of the false kingdom and did not belong to the so-called "Jews' religion."

God never gave the true kingdom to the Jews. He kept His true kingly line in exile, or hidden from them as it were. If the true kingdom, had been, in Palestine at the time of Christ, Joseph the husband of Mary, Jesus' step-father would have been the king on the throne. It is a pity that most Protestant ministers, preachers, evangelists and catholic priests are under, "...strong delusion, that they should believe a lie." [175] They believe,

falsely, that the so-called Jews are Hebrews, or Israelites and of the Bible Tribe of Judah, which is a lie and a terrible deception.

Again, because of the false teachings of the past decades about the Jews: We must repeat and repeat that 90 - 95 percent of the people known to the world today as "Jews" are descendants of the Khazars of Russia. They are "FALSE JEWS." They are like the false Jews that crucified the Lord Jesus Christ. Following is a brief outline of what the Bible and Christ said to and about them:

- 1). "Ye (Jews) are not my sheep." (John 10:26)
- 2). "Ye (Jews) are of your father the devil." (John 8:44)
- 3). "Ye (Jews are) serpents, ye (Jews are a) generation (race) of vipers..." (Matthew 3:33)
- 4). "...the Jews: Who both killed the Lord Jesus..." (1 Thessalonians 2:14-15)
- 5). "...they please not God." (1 Thessalonians 2:15)
- 6). "...are contrary to all men." (1 Thessalonians 2:15)
- 7). "Are the Synagogue of Satan." (Revelation 2:9; 3:9)
- 8). "Hypocrites." (Matthew 23:14)
- 9). "Blind guides." (Matthew 23:16)
- 10). "Full of extortion and excess." (Matthew 23:16)
- 11). "White washed sepulchres." (Matthew 23:23)
- 12). "Full of dead mens' bones." (Matthew 23:27)
- 13). "Degenerate plant of a strong vine." (Jeremiah 2:21)

- 14). "Evil figs." (Jeremiah 24:2-8)
- 15). "Broken cisterns." (Jeremiah 2:13)
- 16). "Broken bottle." (Jeremiah 19:10)
- 17). "Spots in your feast of love." (Jude 12)
- 18). "Cannot blush." (Jeremiah 6:15; 8:12)
- 19). "An astonishment and hissing." (Jeremiah 25:9-18; 51:37)
- 20). "The show of their countenance doth witness against them." (Isaiah 3:9)
- 21). "Pray not for this people (The Jews)." (Jeremiah 7:16; 11:14; 14:11)
- 22). The present day, so-called and false Jewish State of Israel is a sister of Sodom and Gomorrah, and called Hittites, Amarites the descendants of Cain. (Ezekiel 16:1-3; 16:53-57)

Yet in spite of these and hundreds more Bible revelations America's evangelists, preachers, ministers and priests continue teaching The Big Lie; that the Jews are Israel. While our Government keeps right on giving that false Murderous Jewish-Zionist State, billions of dollars a year. And of the 530 members of our Congress and Senate, few have the courage to oppose anything the Jews say and vote for anything the Jews want.

The Scriptures tell us: "And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him (Christ) to be condemned to death, and have crucified him." [176]; "Therefore let all the House of Israel know, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye (Jews) have crucified, both Lord and Christ." [177]; "Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel--Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye (Jews) crucified, whom God raised from the dead..." [178]; "Then Peter and the

other apostles answered and said—The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye (Jews) slew and hanged on a tree." [179];

"And we are witnesses of all things which he (Christ) did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they (Jews) slew and hanged on a tree." [180]; "For they (Jews) that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him (Christ) not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every Sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning him." [181]; "For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews: who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they (Jews) please not God, and are contrary to all men." [182]

Now, just so you will understand why we call the Scribes and Pharisees Jews, we will present the following in the Jews' own words. Michael Rodkinson, in *The History of the Talmud, the Jews' Bible*, in collaboration with Rabbi Isaac M. Wise, stated: "With the conclusion of the first volume of this work at the beginning of the twentieth century, we would invite the reader to take a glance over the past of the Talmud, in which he will see—that not only was the Talmud not destroyed, but was so saved that not a single letter of it is missing; and now it is flourishing to such a degree as cannot be found in its past history—The Talmud is one of the wonders of the world.

During the twenty centuries of its existence—it survived in its entirety, and not only has the power of its foes failed to destroy even a single line, but it has not been able materially to weaken its influence for any length of time. It still dominates the minds of a whole people (the Jews), who venerate its contents as divine truth...

The colleges for the study of the Talmud are increasing almost in every place—especially in this country where millions are gathered for the funds of the two colleges, the Hebrew Union College of Cincinnati and the Jewish Theological Seminary of America in New York, in which, the chief study is the Talmud..."



Then on page 70 Michael Rodkinson stated: "Is the literature that Jesus was familiar with in his early years yet in existence in the world? Is it possible for us to get at it? Can we ourselves review the ideas, the statements, the modes of reasoning and thinking, on moral and religious subjects, which were current in his time, and must have been evolved (studied) by him during those thirty silent years when he was pondering his future mission? To such inquires the learned class of Jewish Rabbis answer by holding up the Talmud. Here, say they...is the written form of that which, in the time of Jesus was called the Traditions of the Elders and to which he makes frequent allusion."

Mongrelisation: With careful study, it will be seen that the sin which brought about the destruction of the flood had nothing whatever to do with the worship of idols; for no idols are mentioned before the flood. It is common knowledge that many Biblical scholars today falsely assume God ordered the segregation of the races because of idol or pagan worship. "When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel." [183]

The Catholic Bible in the Book of Wisdom 12:3-15 we find the following: "For those ancient inhabitants of thy holy land, whom thou didst abhor, because they did works hateful to thee by their sorceries, and wicked sacrifices, and those merciless murderers of their own children, and eaters of men's bowels, and devourers of blood from the midst of thy consecration, and those parents sacrificing with their own hands helpless souls, it was thy will to destroy by the hands of our parents (Israelite - Canaanite wars), that the land which of all is most dear to thee might receive a worthy colony of the children of God. Yet even those thou sparedst as men, and didst send wasps, fore-runners of thy host, to destroy them by little and little. Not that thou wast unable to bring the wicked under the just by war, or by cruel beasts, or with one rough word to destroy them at once, but executing thy judgments by degrees thou gavest them place of repentance, not being ignorant that they were a wicked generation (mixed races and wicked people), and their malice natural, and that the though could never be changed. For it was a cursed seed from the beginning: neither did thou for fear of any one give pardon to their sins."

The people of Noah's time were charged with only one sin, according to the Bible, and that was the sin of not keeping their race pure, for misusing the seed. The sons of God marrying the daughters of men, and breaking the rule "Each after his kind."

"And after that men began to be multiplied upon the earth, and daughters were born to them. The sons of God seeing the daughters of men, that they were fair, took to themselves wives of all which they chose. And God said: My spirit shall not remain in the man forever, because he is flesh, and his days shall be a hundred and twenty years.

Giants were upon the earth in those days. For after the sons of God went in to the daughters of men, and they brought forth children, these are the mighty men of old, men of renown. And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them. That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose.

And the Lord said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years. There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown. And God saw the wickedness of man (the mixing of the races) was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually." [184]

In Baruch 3:26-27 we find: "There were the giants, those renown men that were from the beginning, of great stature, expert in war. The Lord chose not them, neither did they find the way of knowledge: therefore did they perish." Here Baruch is telling us that the giants of Genesis 6, after the flood, were of mixed seed of the sons of God and the daughters of the black race. The mixing of seed through marriage of Seth's children (White Race) with the Black Race was the sin that was responsible for the sentence of God which destroyed the earth by flood. The mingling of the Holy seed with the black (unholy) seed was catastrophic. God saw that the mixing

of the races had filled the earth with iniquity. "All flesh had corrupted its ways on the earth." [185]

So God was forced to destroy them with the flood. But He saved Noah. And why did God save Noah? It was because Noah was: "Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations..." [186] In other words, Noah's family had not corrupted itself, and mixed with the other races.

Fornication is the mixing of the races through sexual relations: Fornication may have more than one meaning, however Paul and Numbers 25:1 tell us that fornication is mixing the races through sexual relations.

We must remember that Tamar [187] was never accused of fornication. Neither was Bethsheba[188] when David went into her. Mary Magdalene is never called a fornicator. So we read when the different races mix their seeds, that it is called fornication.

In 1 Corinthians 10:1-11, Paul said this was written for our instruction and that they were idolaters; and they committed fornication with the non-whites about whom he spoke in Exodus 32 and 33. Their names were scratched out of the Book of Life for that terrible sin. We are commanded by God to be separate from the other races.[189]

White Christians must come to realize just how serious intermarriage or the mixing of the seeds of different races is? To eat is not a sin, God gave us food to eat. To play is not a sin, because the Bible says there is a time for joy. To drink (without getting drunk) is not a sin, Jesus drank wine and blessed it. To dance is not a sin, because the men of God, such as David, danced before the ark of the covenant which was holy. [190]

When the sinful ones, however, sat down to eat, dance and play in an integrated society, this was a sin! In Numbers 11:4, a Mixed Multitude came out of Egypt with the Israelites. The mixed ones burned with desire and caused the Israelites to follow them and fornication occurred. They were integrated and were not worthy of God's covenant. In Numbers 25:1, we find: "And Israel at the time abode in Settim and the people committed fornication (had sex) with the daughters of Moab."

In spite of the fact that idols are mentioned, the Israelites first committed fornication with the Moabites whom God forbade the Israelites to go into (marry or mix with). After Israel committed fornication they ate of the sacrifice and were there initiated to Baal.

God created purity, Satan corrupts it. God created the White Race, who are Israelites and called them His holy seed because they are from the image of Him. When Satan influences people to mix, he causes their seeds to be changed from God's creation to his idea of what creation should be. Remember, God did not recognize Ishmael, the half-breed Egyptian, because He said, "Now I know that thou fearest God and has not spared thy only begotten son for my sake," this shows only Isaac was recognized by God, as Abraham's true seed. In the Catholic Book 2 Par. 21:23, Achab's house is accused of fornication. Did he not marry Jezebel? Wasn't she a Sidonian? A mixed breed.

In Malacah 2:11, Juda married the daughter of a strange god. The Lord cuts off the man (or woman) that does that.

In Hosea 5:3-7, Ephraim committed fornication and Israel was defiled. "I know Ephraim, and Israel is not hid from me: for now, O Ephraim, thou committest whoredom (fornication), and Israel is deviled—They have dealt treacherously against the Lord: for they have begotten strange (mixed) children..."

Certainly people who are of the pure White Race have children because God ordered that, but their children are not strangers. They are called God's holy people. However, when Tamar had Judah's twins, they were not called strange children. A mixed breed was called "strange."

Matthew tells us, "Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon. And, behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil." [191]

Christ answered Her Not A Word. Then His disciples came up and besought Him, saying, "...his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after us."

But He answered and said, "...I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the House of Israel." But she came and worshipped Him, saying, "Lord help me!" He said in answer, "...It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs." She said, "Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table."

Jesus then answered and said: "O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour." Notice that Jesus first ignored and walked away from the Negro Woman. However, this Negro woman knew Jesus was the Master, and Son of David, from whom she would accept "any" help He would bestow (give) her.

She spoke to Jesus as the "Seed of David." Which demonstrated that her faith in Jesus was strong because she said she would take even a crumb. She believed her daughter could be cured by Him. Strangely Jesus did not ask her to believe in Him, nor did He talk salvation to her, as He did to the Israelite woman who lived in Samaria.

Integration is A Curse: Joshua warns us also what will happen if we integrate. "Else if ye do in any wise go back, and cleave unto the remnant of these nations, even these that remain among you, and shall make marriages with them, and go in unto them, and they to you: know for a certainty that the Lord your God will no more drive out any of these nations from before you; but they shall be snares and traps unto you, and scourges in your sides, and thorns in your eyes, until ye perish from off this good land which the Lord your God hath given you."

Therefore, it is very clear we, The White Race, are not to mix with the other Races! And if we do God will curse us and destroy us from the face of the earth, leaving only those who are pure in their races, as was Noah. Make no mistake about it!

Moses first wife was a Negro Woman but he never had sexual relations with her: As you begin to study God's Word and He begins to open your eyes to His wonderful truths, deceivers will come in and try to tell you that integration is all right because Moses was married to a Negro Woman.

Well he was. His first wife was a Negro, but he did not marry her of his own accord, she was appointed by the people of Cush to be his wife. And Moses never went into unto her, nor did he ever have sexual relations with her. He obeyed God and kept himself pure of the sin of miscegenation (Race Mixing). The entire story is related in the Book of Jasher.

One of the books, purposely left out of the Bible because the Jews did not wish for Christians to learn many truths, which are contained therein. "And when Moses was eighteen years old, he desired to see his father and mother and he went to them to Goshen, and when Moses had come near Goshen, he came to the place where the Children of Israel were engaged in work, and he observed their burdens, and he saw an Egyptian smiting one of his Hebrew brethren.

And when the man who was beaten saw Moses he ran to him for help, for the man Moses was greatly respected in the house of Pharaoh, and he said to him, My lord attend to me, this Egyptian came to my house in the night, bound me, and came to my wife in my presence, and now he seeks to take my life away. And when Moses heard this wicked thing, his anger was kindled against the Egyptian, and he turned this way and the other, and when he saw there was no man there he smote the Egyptian and hid him in the sand, and delivered the Hebrew from the hand of him that smote him.

And the Hebrew went to his house, and Moses returned to his home, and went forth and came back to the king's house. And when the man had returned home, he thought of repudiating his wife, for it was not right in the house of Jacob, for any man to come to his wife after she had been defiled (had sex with another race). And the woman went and told her brothers, and the woman's brothers sought to slay him, and he fled to his house and escaped. And on the second day Moses went forth to his

brethren, and saw, and behold two men were quarrelling, and he said to the wicked one, Why dost thou smite thy neighbour?

And he answered him and said to him. Who has set thee for a prince and judge over us? didst thou think to slay me as thou didst slay the Egyptian? and Moses was afraid and he said, Surely the thing is known? And Pharaoh heard of this affair, and he ordered Moses to be slain, so God sent his angel, and he appeared unto Pharaoh in the likeness of a captain of the guard.

And angel of the Lord took the sword from the hand of the captain of the guard, and took his head off with it, for the likeness of the captain of the guard was turned into the likeness of Moses. And the angel of the Lord took hold of the right hand of Moses, and brought him forth from Egypt, and placed him from without the borders of Egypt, a distance of forty days' journey." [192]

Our King James version of the Bible relates the story this way: "And it came to pass in those days, when Moses was grown, that he went out unto his brethren, and looked on their burdens: and he spied an Egyptian smiting an Hebrew, one of his brethren. And he looked this way and that way, and when he saw that there was no man, he slew the Egyptian, and hid him in the sand.

And when he went out the second day, behold, two men of the Hebrews strove together: and he said to him that did the wrong, Wherefore smitest thou thy fellow? And he said, Who made thee a prince and a judge over us? intendest thou to kill me, as thou killedst the Egyptian? And Moses feared, and said, Surely this thing is known. Now when Pharaoh heard this thing, he sought to slay Moses. But Moses fled from the face of Pharaoh, and dwelt in the land of Midian and he sat down by a well." [193]

There was a lot happened between the time that Moses left Egypt and when he came to the well at Midian. Following is what transpired in the intervening forty nine years: "And Moses was eighteen years old when he fled from Egypt from the presence of Pharaoh, and he fled and escaped to the camp of Kikianus, which at that time was besieging Cush. And

Moses was nine years in the camp of Kikianus king of Cush, all the time that they were besieging Cush, and Moses went out and came in with them. And the king and princes and all the fighting men loved Moses, for he was great and worthy, his stature was like a noble lion, his face was like the sun, and his strength was like that of a lion, and he was counsellor to the king.

And at the end of nine years, Kikianus was seized with a mortal disease, and his illness prevailed over him, and he died on the seventh day. So his servants embalmed him and carried him and buried him opposite the city gate to the north of the land of Egypt—

And they wished to choose on that day a man for king from the army of Kikianus, and they found no object of their choice like Moses to reign over them. And they hastened and stripped off each man his garments and cast them upon the ground, and they made a great heap and placed Moses thereon.

And they rose up and blew with trumpets and called out before him, and said, May the king live, may the king live! And all the people and nobles swore unto him to give him for a wife Adoniah the Queen, the Cushite, wife of Kikianus, and they made Moses King over them on that day...Moses reigned over the children of Cush on that day, in the place of Kikianus king of Cush—Moses was twenty-seven years old when he began to reign over Cush, and forty years did he reign—

And they placed the royal crown upon his head, and they gave him for a wife Adoniah the Cushite queen, and wife of Kikianus. And Moses feared the Lord God of his fathers, so that he came not to her, nor did he turn his eyes to her. For Moses remembered how Abraham had made his servant Eliezer swear, saying unto him, Thou shalt not take a woman from the daughters of Canaan for my son Isaac. Also what Isaac did when Jacob had fled from his brother, when he commanded him, saying, thou shalt not take a wife from the daughters of Canaan, nor make alliance with any of the Children of Ham. For the Lord our God gave Ham the son of Noah, and his children and all his seed, as slaves to the children of Shem and to the children of Japheth, and unto their seed after them for slaves, forever.



Therefore Moses turned not his heart nor his eyes to the wife of Kikianus all the days that he reigned over Cush.

And Moses feared the Lord his God all his life, and Moses walked before the Lord in truth (did not mix his seed with that of the Negro Woman), and with all his heart and soul, he turned not from the right way (did not mix with another race) all the days of his life; he declined not from the way either to the right or to the left, in which Abraham, Isaac and Jacob had walked—

And in the fortieth year of the reign of Moses over Cush, Moses was sitting on the royal throne whilst Adoniah the queen was before him, and all the nobles were sitting around him. And Adoniah the queen said before the king and the princes. What is this thing which you, the children of Cush, have done for this long time? Surely you know that for forty years that this man has reigned over Cush he has not approached me, nor has he served the gods of the children of Cush.

Now therefore hear, O ye children of Cush, and let this man no more reign over you as he is not of our flesh (Moses was a White Man). Behold Menacrus my son is grown up, let him reign over you, for it is better for you to sever the son of your lord, than to serve a stranger, a slave of the king of Egypt. And all the people and nobles of the children of Cush heard the words which Adoniah the queen had spoken in their ears.

And all the people were preparing until the evening, and in the morning they rose up early and made Menacrus, son of Kikianus, king over them. And all the children of Cush were afraid to stretch forth their hand against Moses, for the Lord was with Moses, and the children of Cush remembered the oath which they swore unto Moses, therefore they did no harm to him. But the children of Cush gave many presents to Moses, and sent him from them with great honour. So Moses went forth from the land of Cush, and went home and ceased to reign over Cush, and Moses was sixty-six years old when he went out of the land of Cush, for the thing was from the Lord, for the period had arrived which he had appointed in the day of old, to bring forth Israel from the affliction of the children of Ham. So Moses went to Midian..." [194] Thus, it is clear to see, fornication, as described

in chapter twenty-five of Numbers, is interracial marriage. So, the one thing that Balak and Balaam were successful in doing was in getting Israel to sacrifice unto idols and to commit fornication.

Integration, when looked at honestly, not through the slant of false teachings by the anti-Christ, is nothing less than the destruction of any society; it is also the destruction of the two different races which are combined. Integration will destroy the White Race if God were to allow it to continue unabated. Which is the ultimate goal of the anti-Christ, because they believe that with the destruction of the White Race they will be able to once again claim the birthright their father, Esau, sold.

### **Question: Do We Work in Vain When It Seems like All Our Efforts Are Ineffectual?**

**Answer:** Before you can teach anyone, you must somehow establish some common ground so you can win their confidence.

Many times this is difficult, especially by mail. With preachers it is even more difficult, because they are out to teach you and build their ministries with contributions. They are not generally geared to learn from you are anyone else, unless it will help to fill the offering plate faster and more fully.

Recently, the ghost-writer of a multi-million dollar evangelistic organization, who wrote that the evangelists never go beyond the "milk" (i.e., personal salvation message), because large ministries cannot be built by teaching in-depth Bible doctrine.

They are more interested in building their ministries than in teaching our people the Word of God. They believe that if they would accept the Identity and other Bible Truths and then preach them, they would lose their support and their ministries. It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle  
minister to enter  
kingdom of

for a rich  
t h e  
h e a v e .



(That verse is from the JOV - the Martin Opinionated Version).

**Question: The Only Way I Can Purchase a House Is to Borrow the Money from the Bankers at Interest. Is It Wrong to Do so?**

**Answer:** It is seldom actually a "good" thing to borrow, even when no interest is involved. However, there are many times when we are faced with two opinions, neither of which is ideal. So we must decide which one is best. This is where your conscience is very important.

It is Scripturally important that you provide for your family. [195] So we would suggest that as long as you do not attempt to provide a 26-room mansion for your family, that such debt is justifiable. Be prudent, and be practical and not extravagant.

The Law itself does not forbid the "payment" of usury. It merely considers it to be "slavery." The Law on forbids the "charging" of interest when you loan money to others. In other words don't put your brother into slavery like Babylon has done to us.

The fact is, we are now in Babylon as a nation, whether we like it or not. Under this system, it is often almost impossible to do what is ideally right. We can only do our best, pray that God will remove this yoke from off our necks, and thank God that our justification is based upon the perfect righteousness of Christ, not upon our own ability to obey the Law perfectly.

Of course, God has led many ministers in such a way that they do not put their church into debt and then take God's tithe money and pay it out as usury. They also have not fallen into the deceitful trap of overextending the ministry and then having to go into debt to pay for it (expecting God to bail them out). Such a misuse of funds is usually called "faith" and is standard practice of the so-called "faith-ministries." But we have a different name for it.

**Question: Did We Exist Prior to Our Formation on Earth? Dr. Wesley Swift Says That the Word "Formed" Really Means "to Bring Forth as an Offspring or Issue of the Most High God."**

**Answer:** The Hebrew word translated "Formed" in Genesis 2:7 is "Yatsar." Which simply means "to potter."

If Dr. Swift's definition is correct, then we must also assume that "every beast of the field and every fowl of the air" [196] is also the offspring or issue of the Most High God. They too were "formed," and the Hebrew word is identical.

Other things that God said were "formed" (Yatsar) were the leviathan [197] and graven images.[198] Are we to assume that all these animals and idols preexisted in heaven before creation?

If not, then one cannot logically use "Yatsar" to imply preexistence for man either. The Scriptures are very clear that Adam (not just his body) originated in the dust of the ground. In fact, Adam was even named after the ground. The Hebrew word for ground found in Genesis 2:7 is "adamah." God formed "Adam" from the dust of the "adamah."

The Three World Ages: In this study we will be covering the three world ages. We will document from God's Word the fact that there was a previous earth age, the age that was, an age before this present earth age, just as there is an age to come. We are going to tie this in to the fact that Satan ruled and reigned in the age that was, after his fall, through deception, what his position was relative to God, and how the fall came about.

We will answer many questions as we dig into God's Word and find the deeper truths hidden there. Truths that you have not been taught from the pulpit, because, frankly, they don't understand God's Word and they have no inkling at all to the fact that there indeed was an age that was. We will find that not only is there an age that was, but also that there were cities in this previous age, and that this planet was indeed inhabited between

Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2. This knowledge of the three world ages is very important. For without understanding that there was a previous earth age, the present earth age, and an age to come, you will not be able to understand God's plan, for it encompasses all three earth ages.

Now that we have shown you that the trees, spoken of in Genesis are people and not literal wooden trees: Let's begin this study right in the very beginning in the Book of Genesis. The word Genesis in fact is not a Hebrew word, but a Greek word that comes from the Septuagint. The word Genesis in the Greek simply means creation or generation. This will give us an account from the beginning. Then we will peruse through the Scriptures and pin down certain Scripture passages that will give you a clearer understanding that God has put there so that we might know about this age that was.

These are important things, because if you don't understand these things, then you will not understand any of the deeper things in God's Word. This way you will be better prepared to stand in these end days soon to come.

"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." [199]

## **Earth:**

Hebrew 776, 'erets, eh'-rets; from an unused root prob. mean. to be firm; the earth (at large, or partitively a land):-X common, country, earth, field, ground, land, X nations, way, + wilderness, world.

This verse goes all the way back to the time when God first initiated the creation. This is not the beginning of the creation of this earth age, but the very beginning, even back to the world that was. Just to pin this down we are going to turn to Proverbs 8, and we want to take a few passages there just to begin to give us an idea of this overall plan that God has had from the beginning.

This is God speaking here, and He is speaking about wisdom: God's wisdom. "The Lord possessed me in the beginning of his way, before his works of old." [200] This was before this present earth age. "I was set up

from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was. When there were no depths, I was brought forth; when there were no fountains abounding with water. While as yet he had made the earth {'erets}, nor the fields, nor the highest part of the dust of the world."

This loses something in the translation here from the Hebrew, because in the Hebrew, "this nor the highest part of the dust of the world" is referring to the very atom, the very building block of matter as we understand it. "When he prepared the heavens, I was there; when he set a compass {circle, vault} upon the face of the depth:"

### **Compass:**

Hebrew 2329, chuwg, khoog; from Heb 2328, a circle:-circle, circuit, compass.

"When he established the clouds above: when he strengthened the fountains of the deep {abyss}: When he gave to the sea his decree, that the waters should not pass his commandment {coasts}: when he appointed the foundations of the earth: Then I was by him, as one brought up with him {constantly with him}; and I was daily his delight, rejoicing always before him;" This verse is better translated "then I became beside him." This word "was" we will note when we get back to Genesis 1 should have been translated "became." "Rejoicing in the habitable part of his earth; and my delights were with the sons of men." [201]

You see, you have to understand that God is talking here about an age that was. He is talking about a time before this present earth age. We are going to find many more passages like this throughout the Scripture referring to this age before, and we must understand what this means to us. Why is it important to understand this? And why if you do not have this knowledge, because they don't teach it to you from the pulpits and churches today, is it that you will not be prepared for the times to come? If you do not understand these things, you will not stand in those days.

Alright, let's go back to Genesis and pick up with verse 2, and cover more of these passages. We have much material to cover, because there are so

many scriptures that document the fact that there was an age before. That God had a host, sons of God, children, souls if you will, that He had created even back then, and they inhabited this earth. The very earth that we are reading about here.

You have been taught that the earth began only 6,000 years ago. Now stop and think about that for a moment. It is one of the reasons Christianity has had such a difficult, if not impossible task, of getting its teachings included in science classes. Take the issue of evolution verses creation for example. It is rather stupid for a Christian to stand up and say "well this earth is only 6,000 years old."

Any scientist with any moxie at all is just going to tear you apart. It is very simple using God's natural happenings and events and situations for a scientist to prove that this earth is indeed millions of years old. Fossils, carbon dating, there are many methods at their disposal to prove that a Christian who stands up and says that this earth is 6,000 years old is an idiot. It is no wonder that we can't have our Christian creation taught in classes today in the public schools, because quite simply, Christians don't bother to find out the fact from God's word.

Had they done so, they would have been prepared to argue our right to teach creation as a viable scientific fact. We are going to prove from God's word that the earth is indeed millions of years old, that there was a habitable earth {'erets}, prior to verse 2 of Genesis 1. "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was {became}, without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters." [202]

The word "was" is a mistranslation. It should have been translated "became." "Was" is a form of the verb "to be," and in Hebrew there is no verb "to be." Now to understand what the phrase "without form and void" really means, you must understand what the phrase in Hebrew really says. In the Hebrew, this phrase reads *tohuw va bohuw*.

Without form:

Hebrew 8414, tohus, to'-hoo; from an unused root mean to lie waste; a desolation {of surface}, i.e., desert; fig. a worthless thing; adv. in vain-confusion, empty place, without form, nothing, (thing of) nought, vain, vanity, waste, wilderness.

### **Void:**

Hebrew 922, bohuw, bo'-hoo; from an unused root (mean. to be empty); a vacuity, i.e. (superficially) an undistinguishable ruin:-emptiness, void.

If you don't learn any other Hebrew phrases, learn this one: tohuw va bohuw. We will come upon this phrase in other passages of the Scripture referring to this same period of time.

**Verse 2** would then be better translated as: and the earth became totally destroyed, void. We will find out that the earth was not created this way. God did not create the earth destroyed, He created it inhabited and saw that it was very good. He did this in the age that was, and the destruction came about because of the fall of Satan in the age that was, as we are going to learn.

Let's go to 2 Peter 3 and study some New Testament references to this age that was and to the destruction of that time. "Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts. And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water." [203]

God's word plainly states that for this they willingly are ignorant of, they choose to be ignorant, they want to be ignorant, or else they would learn the truth as it is written, but they don't. It is not taught in the seminaries, and the pastors and teachers don't teach it to you; they are willingly ignorant, they don't want to know these things. Therefore you can't know these things unless you are driven to God's word for yourself. That is the purpose of this ministry, to drive you into God's word, so that you can



study for yourself and learn, learn, learn. "Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished." [204]

### **Perished:**

Greek 622, apollumi, ap-ol'-loo-mee; form Grk 575 and the base of Grk 3639; to destroy fully (reflex. to perish, or lose), lit. or fig.: -destroy, lose, mar, perish. Greek 3639. olethros, ol'-eth-ros; from a prim. ollumi (to destroy; a prol. form): ruin, i.e. death, punishment: -destruction.

"But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men." [205]

Notice the difference between verse 6 and verse 7. Verse 6 reads "whereby the world that then was," and verse 7, "but the heavens and the earth which are now."

"But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day." [206]

Well we have almost completed six days. Before the year 2000 we will have finished six days. The seventh day is our day of rest. Those with eyes to see and ears to hear will understand. "The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance." [207]

Now let's go back and review what we have just learned. Peter is talking about two ages here, the age that then was, and the age that is now. A lot of your pastor/teachers out there are going to try to tell you that this is talking about Noah's flood. This is not so, this could not possibly be talking about Noah's flood.

First of all, Noah's flood did not destroy everything. It did not leave the earth utter void. Noah and his family as well as two of every living creature lived, they were not destroyed.

Second of all, the flood of Noah was not even world wide. The flood did not cover the whole earth. From Genesis 1:1, we have already learned that the Hebrew word for earth is 'erets. That is not the case when it comes to Noah's flood. "For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the earth forty days and forty nights; and every living substance that I have made will I destroy from off the face of the earth." [208] In this case, the Hebrew word for earth is not 'erets, but is 'adamah, which comes from the root word 'adam. Properly, the Hebrew word 'adamah means the land or country of the descendants of Adam.

## Earth

**Hebrew #127.** 'adamah, ad-aw-maw': from Heb 119; soil from its gen. (redness):-country, earth, ground, husband [-man] (-ry), land.

Hebrew #119, 'adam, aw-dam'; to show blood (in the face), i.e., flush or turn rosy:-be (dyed, made) red (ruddy).

From this we learn that the flood was not world wide as so often taught, but was instead brought upon Adam's lineage and their land. And third, it says here: "By the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished."

Did Noah's flood cause the heavens to perish? Show me where that is written; it's not. The heavens in Noah's flood were not destroyed. You see, you must understand that these are two different ages spoken of here. Now remember also, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand days as one day. We are approaching the end of our sixth day, wake up! it is time to wake up and study God's word for yourself before it is too late.

Before we get back to the Book of Genesis, we are going to pick up a few verses from Jeremiah 4 so as to document further, and to leave no doubt in your mind, that indeed there was an age that was an that this is part of God's overall plan for salvation; for bringing unto Himself a pure undefiled spotless bride. God is seeking children that love Him freely. Love is the

one thing that God will not manufacture. Because there was an age that was, and Satan's fall took down with him a third of the sons of God from that age that was, this age became necessary. Alright, let's document this world that was from the Book of Jeremiah. "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken {subdue} the nations!" [209]

### **Weaken:**

**Hebrew 2522.** Chalash, khaw-lash'; a prim. root; to prostrate; by impl. to overthrow, decay:-discomfit, waste away, weaken.

"For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars {children} of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High." [210] Keep in mind now, that this transpired in the age that was and brought about the destruction of that age: God choosing to destroy His creation rather than His children.

"Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. (Compare also Revelation 20) They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; (this will transpire in the age to come). That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof, that opened not the house of his prisoners? All the kings of the nations, even all of them, lie in glory, every one in his own house. But thou art cast off of thy grave like an abominable branch, and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcass trodden under feet." [211]

Now that we have seen an account of Satan's fall and why the first earth age was destroyed. Let's continue on in the Book of Isaiah and document from God's word the fact that the earth was not created in vain, destroyed, tohuw, but to be inhabited. "For this saith the Lord that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain (tohuw), he formed it to be inhabited: I am the Lord; and there is none else." [212]

## Vain:

**Hebrew 8414.** tohus, to'-hoo; from an unused root mean. to lie waste; a desolation (of surface), i.e. desert; fig. a worthless thing; adv. in vain:-confusion, empty place, without form, nothing, (thing of) nought, vain, vanity, waste, wilderness.

You see, God did not create the earth tohuw, He created it to be inhabited. Remember Genesis 1:2, and the earth became tohuw. In the age that was, God created the heaven and the earth to be inhabited; that is why there were cities. The sons of God dwelt there and God amongst them until Satan decided that he would be like the most high. The same pattern that transpired in the age that was, i.e., Satan's attempt to use a one world government system to rule and a religious system whereby he would ascend up on high and be like the most high, will again transpire in this age. That is why it is so imperative that you understand both the world that was and this earth age.

Satan is once more using the political system, the religious system, education, and economics, the same methods that he used in the age that was to bring about the downfall. He has only one desire and motivation, to set himself up as God and to be worshipped as God. That is why you must know and understand that there was an age prior to this age, all of God's children were created at that time, and not at the beginning of this age.

We will document this further when we get back into the Book of Genesis. But, just to first give you an overall picture, the souls were created in the first earth age and not in this age.

When they fell, when they rebelled against God and followed the lies and deception of Satan in the age that was an were cast down, God destroyed that earth age, and then instituted this age whereby through Christ He could reconcile those souls who were lost, back to Himself. The plan is perfect and God is in control, but you have not been taught these things. If you can understand this knowledge, you will be better prepared to stand in the days that are soon to come when this same one, Satan, Lucifer, that

old dragon returns to this earth in person to once more deceive the nations into worshipping him, through the political beast and the religious beast.

Now that we have shown you from God's word that the earth was not created without form, desolate, vain, destroyed, tohuw, but became that way: let's return to Genesis 1 and pick up with verse 3 where we left off. "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters." [213]

### **Firmament:**

**Hebrew #7549**, raqiya', raw-kee'-ah; from Heb 7554; prop. an expanse, i.e., the firmament or (apparently) visible arch of the sky:-firmament.

**Hebrew #7554**. raqa', raw-kah'; a prim. root, to pound the earth (as a sign of passion); by analogy to expand (by hammering); by impl. to overlay (with thin sheets of metal):-beat, make broad, spread abroad (forth, over, out, into plates), stamp, stretch.

"And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning the second day." [214]

### **Heaven**

**Hebrew #8064**, shamayim, shaw-mah'-yim; dual of an unused sing. shameh, shaw-meh'; from an unused root mean. to be lofty; the sky (as aloft; the dual perh. alluding to the visible arch in which the clouds move, as well as to the higher ether where the celestial bodies revolve):-air, X astrologer, heaven (-s). "And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear; and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of

the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so." [215]

The next several passages will all point to one thing, it completely kills the whole doctrine of evolution because God's word plainly states that each and every living thing that God created reproduces only after its own kind, and He continually repeats that fact.

"And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw it was good.

And the evening and the morning were the third day. And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so.

And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth. And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day." [216] The number four in Biblical numerics represents the earth or earthly things.

"And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven." [217] Life should be translated soul.

## **Life:**

**Hebrew #5315.** nephesh, neh'-fesh; from Heb 5314; prop. a breathing creature, i.e., animal or (abstr.) vitality; used very widely in a lit., accommodated or fig. sense (bodily or mental): - any, appetite, beast,

body, breath, creature, X dead (-ly), desire, X [dis-] contented, X fish, ghost, + greedy, he, heart (-y), (hath, X jeopardy of) life (X in jeopardy); lust, man, me, mind, mortally, one, own, person, pleasure, (her-, him-, my-, thy-) self, them (your) -selves, + slay, soul, + tablet, they, thing, (X she) will, X would have it.

Hebrew #5314. naphash, naw-fash'; a prim. root; to breathe; pass., to be breathed upon, i.e. (fig.) refreshed (as if by a current of air):-(be) refresh selves (-ed).

The Hebrew word nephesh was used 754 times in the Old Testament. 472 of those times it was translated as soul, the other 282 times it was used, it was translated with 44 different meanings. "And God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth. And the evening and the morning were the fifth day." [218] The number five in Biblical numerics represents grace.

"And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish or the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them." [219]

Now this particular man that the scriptures are talking about here in verse 26-28, are referring to men that were not tillers of the ground, but rather hunters and fishermen (hunter-gatherers). This is important, keep this in mind. These men and women were to have dominion over the wild animals: fish, birds, wild beasts. They were hunters and fishermen. Some of the races of this age come from this sixth day creation as you will find

out. But in this age, these that were created on the sixth day were hunters and fishermen (hunter-gatherers).

"And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth." [220] Notice that here it states that this man was to "be fruitful and multiply, and REPLENISH the earth." What does it mean to replenish something? It means to fill again or refill.

### **Replenish:**

**Hebrew #4390. mala' (Esth. 7:5)**, maw-law'; a prim. root, to fill or (intrans.) be full of, in a wide application (lit. and fig.):-accomplish, confirm, + consecrate, be at an end, be expired, be fenced, fill, fulfil, (be, become, X draw, give in, go) full (-ly, -ly set, tale), [over-] flow, fullness, furnish, gather (selves, together), presume, replenish, satisfy, set, space, take a [hand-] full, + have wholly.

Also, again make a note of it, the Scriptures say nothing about farming, that man should be a farmer and till the ground, but that he was to have dominion over the wild beasts. This sixth day man was a hunter-gatherer.

"And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day." [221]

Now did you grasp that? This is the sixth day. He made the races of men and women who had dominion over the sea, dominion over the fowl, and dominion over the wild beasts. This was done on the sixth day. These men were hunter-gatherers, not farmers. This will be covered deeper at another time, but we want to touch on it, because it is part of God's overall



plan stemming from the age that was, which is what we are studying. "Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made." [222]

The word "host" in verse 1 in the Hebrew means to mass an army in waiting or servants in waiting.

### **Host:**

**Hebrew #6635.** tsaba', tsaw-baw'; or (fem.) tseba'ah, tseb-aw-aw'; from Heb 6633; a mass of persons (or fig. things), espec. reg. organized for war (an army); by impl. a campaign, lit. or fig. (spec. hardship, worship):-appointed time, (+) army, (+) battle, company, host, service, soldiers, waiting upon, war (-fare).

**Hebrew #6633.** tsaba', tsaw-baw'; a prim. root; to mass (an army or servants):-assemble, fight, perform, muster, wait upon, war.

This word host is used many times in the Scriptures. It is interesting that right here in the first verse of the second chapter of Genesis He is already speaking of this host. Who is this host? Why is it important that God tells us that about this host? "Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them."

This host, implied by the Hebrew word tsaba,' means to mass an army or servants, to muster, to wait upon, organized for war at an appointed time; all out of this word host. You see, if you remember back earlier, we told you that souls of all living children of God were created in the age that was. Those souls were not created at the instant there was a conception here in the flesh on the earth in this age.

The souls were created in the age that was: this is the host that God is talking about here, an army of servants in waiting, waiting to be placed into this age. If we have time after finishing this study on the age that was,

so that you have a well-founded, documented from God's word proof of an age that was, so that it is clear to your understanding, we want to touch upon this host further.

How is this host relative to today as well as in times past? What is this army in waiting? Waiting for what? Hopefully we will find out at the end of this study. Alright, we want to go not to Psalm 104 and take a few passages to document further from God's word of the age that was relative to this host.

Who was this host? Well, we are going to touch on that here and we find out how God refers to them. "Who layeth the beams of his chambers in the waters: who maketh the clouds {thick clouds} his chariot: who walketh upon the wings of the wind {spirit}." [223]

### **Chariot:**

**Hebrew #7398.** rekuwb, rek-oob'; from pass. part of Heb 7392; a vehicle (as ridden on):-chariot.

### **Wind:**

Hebrew #7307. ruwach, roo'-akh; from Heb 7306; wind; by resemblance breath, i.e. a sensible (or even violent) exhalation; fig. life. anger, unsubstantiality; by extens. a region of the sky; by resemblance spirit, but only of a rational being (includ. its expression and functions):-air, anger, blast, breath, X cool, courage, mind, X quarter, X side, spirit ([ual]), tempest, X vain, ([whirl-]) wind (-y).

"Who laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever." [224]

The earth will never be totally destroyed, or in other words, made non-existent. it will be rejuvenated in the age to come, but will never be totally destroyed. God has laid it waste as we have found out earlier, tohuw va bohus, in chapter 1 of Genesis. The earth became void and without form, but did not cease to exist, nor will it ever.

"Thou coveredst it with the deep as with a garment: the waters stood above the mountains." [225] Now this is the transition from the age that was into this age. Remember the account given in 2 Peter 3.

"For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water." [226]; "Thou coveredst it with the deep as with a garment: the waters stood above the mountains. At thy rebuke they fled; at the voice of thy thunder they hasted away." [227]

Verse 7 here is indicating the time of the rejuvenation of this earth at the start of this earth age, and these other verses are prior to that. It's very simple. Let's go now to Job 38 and further document this world that was from God's word.

Then the Lord answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said, Who is this that darkeneth counsel by words without knowledge? Gird up now thy loins like a man; for I will demand of thee, and answer thou me. Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding. Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? or who hath stretched the line upon it? Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof. When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?" [228]

"When the morning stars sang together," this referring to that very host, the host that was in the age that was. The host of Genesis 2:1, that army of servants in waiting.

Interestingly, when they sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy was even prior to the fall of Satan. This was when everything was as it should be. The sons of God simply being the children of God, whose souls that were already created in the age that was, as were all of them, and this is that very same host.

Before we go on, we would like to pin something down a little further for you. Remember back in Psalm 104:3 the word chariot, that we told you was a real vehicle.

"Who layeth the beams of his chambers in the waters: who maketh the clouds his chariot: who walketh upon the wings of the wind." [229]

Let's pin this vehicle down for you and look at a word commonly translated in the King James Bible as whirlwind, as we have just read in Job.

"Then the Lord answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said." [230]

This word "whirlwind" would also be better translated as a vehicle or that which was within the stormy wind (ruach). To give you a better description of this chariot or whirlwind, this vehicle, let's go to Ezekiel 1.

"And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud, and a fire involving itself, and a brightness was about it, and out of the midst therefor as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire." [231] This colour of amber would be better translated as highly polished bronze.

### **Amber:**

Hebrew #2830. chashmal, khash-mal'; of uncert. der.; prob. bronze or polished spectrum metal:-amber.

So what we have here is a highly polished bronze vehicle, in the midst of the whirlwind. "Also out of the midst thereof came the likeness of four living creatures. And this was their appearance; they had the likeness of a man." [232]

What is being describe here, as much as I hate to say this, but you with eyes to see and ears to hear will understand. In verse 4 we are getting a glimpse of the mother ship of you will. A vehicle that is very large, out of which four smaller ships come. Don't wrestle with this, just let it sink in.

"And every one had four faces, and every one had four wings. And their feet were straight {unjointed} feet; and the sole of their feet was like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the colour of burnished brass." [233]

You see, here again we have this highly polished bronze vehicle, only these are smaller. These came out of the mother ship.

"And they had the hands of a man under their wings on their four sides; and they four had their faces and their wings. Their wings were joined one to another; they burned not when they went; they went every one straight forward. As for the likeness of their faces, they four had the face of a man, and the face of a lion, on the right side; and they four had the face of an ox on the left side; they four also had the face of an eagle." [234]

You see, this is that chariot, or one of those chariots, spoken of in Psalm 104. That which appeared to man periodically such as Job and Ezekiel out of the whirlwind, and that same chariot no doubt that came and took away Elijah.

"And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven." [235]

This fiery chariot is something to keep in mind. Just file that away in your memory. Now let's get back to Genesis, chapter 2, and pick up where we left off before.

"And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made." [236]

You see, God was resting on the seventh day from all that He had made; a positive thing. Man rests on one day because of fatigue, a big difference. Also, you have got to remember that as we found in 2 Peter 3, a day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as a day.

Well, we have gone through almost six thousand years, six days, and as is spoken of in Matthew 24 and Mark 13, we are approaching the birth of a new age. This new age is almost upon us friends, the seventh day if you will.

For those with eyes to see and ears to hear, our day of rest. Those with eyes to see and ears to hear are those who understand these deeper things, who understand that the false Messiah is first to show up, those who understand that there was an age before this age and how it fits in with God's plan.

You can understand these things because you have God's word in truth as it is written. Now it is time for you to be about the Lord's business of painting seeds and spreading the truth to others.

You must understand about this age that was before this one. An age that began with peace, with harmony, the sons of God dwelling with the Father. All things being as they should be, until iniquity was found in Satan and he began to deceive the children of God in the age that was, until they eventually rebelled against God.

Then God was left with a choice, God could either kill his children, destroy those souls {learn to think of God's children, all of us, as souls rather than flesh bodies}, or He could destroy His creation. We want to touch on this a little bit more because without understanding this from God's word, you will not understand the overall plan of God from the beginning, because it is not taught from the pulpits of the churches today, as it has not been taught for many centuries now. But this is as is written in God's word.

If you have a King James Bible and a Strong's Concordance you can prove these things out, being able to get back to the original words and their meanings from the Hebrew and Greek as they appear in the manuscripts.

Alright, we want to go back to 2 Peter 3 and cover it again, and take a few more verses than we did before, because you must understand these three world ages. The age that was, this age, and the one very soon to come.

"This second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you; in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance." [237]

Now without going into a lot of detail, it brings to mind here, by this way of remembrance, that many of you have known for a long time that there

is more to God's word than you have been taught. That there were many things written within the thousands and thousands of words printed in God's word, that living letter to his children, that you have not been told and have not been taught.

By way of remembrance, there are many of you with eyes to see and ears to hear, those of you who the scripture refers to as elect, who have been placed in this age at this time for a special purpose, one that we will touch upon a little later.

But you have known instinctively, intuitively, that there is more to God's word, that there is a purpose or destiny for you in these days. A plan that God has specifically for you. Because of that, you must understand the age that was, this age, and the age soon to come. It must be clear in your mind.

"That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Savior: Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation." [238]

First of all, they don't even understand what has happened from the beginning of creation.

"For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water." [239]

What God is saying is that the majority of the pastor(s), teacher(s) today are willingly ignorant, they choose not to know.

They choose not to get into God's word themselves and check out the truth as it is written, but would rather lean upon the false teachings and the doctrines and traditions of men that have been handed down in the seminaries from past generations to the present. They teach you that you

will fly away, that the first supernatural entity that arrives is the true Messiah, Jesus Christ, when in fact it will be antichrist, Satan himself. "By the word of God the heavens were of old,"

He spoke, and it was so. Peter here is talking about the age that was, not this age. "And the earth standing in the water and out of the water," which again, is the same account given in Psalm 104:6. This is the age that was and not Noah's flood as they would try to teach you. It is all spelled out for you right here. How can it be any clearer?

"Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished." [240]

Perished:

Greek #622. apollumi, ap-ol-loo-mee; from Grk 575 and the base of Grk 3639; to destroy fully (reflex. to perish, or lose), lit. or fig.-destroy, die, lose, mar, perish.

"But the heavens and the earth, which are not, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire {God is a consuming fire, See Deuteronomy 4:24; Hebrews 12:29} against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men." [241] Again, how simple the word of God is. Verse 6: "The world that then was." Verse 7: "The heavens and the earth which are now."

Perdition:

Greek #684. apoleia, ap-o'-li-a; from a presumed der. of Grk 622; ruin or loss (phys. spiritual or eternal):-damnable (-nation), destruction, die, perdition, X perish, pernicious ways, waste.

This word for perdition, apoleia, is the same root word used to describe the son of perdition, the only one who thus far has been judged and sentenced to perish, Satan himself, and he is first to come.

"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition...But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. The



Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that nay should perish, but that all should come to repentance." [242]

It was never in God's plan that any should perish. That is why He destroyed the creation of the age that was, instead of destroying his children.

"But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up." [243]

This word elements would be better translated as the rudiments, or evil spirits, the wicked. "Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ." [244]

### **Elements:**

**Greek #4747. Stoicheion**, stoy-khl'-on; neut. of a presumed der. of the base of Grk 4748; something orderly in arrangement, i.e. (by impl.) a serial (basal, fundamental, initial) constituent (lit.), proposition (fig.): -element, principle, rudiment.

Burned up:

Greek #2618. katakaiō, kat-ak-ah'ee-o; from Grk 2596 and Grk 2545; to burn down (to the ground), i.e., consume wholly: -burn (up, utterly).

"Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness, Looking for an hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements (rudiments) shall melt with fervent heat? Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness." [245]

Alright now, let's go to Ephesians 1 and take a few passages here because this has to do with the overall plan of God. Pay close attention here because

you are not taught these things from the pulpit, and without these truths you will not stand in the days soon to come when antichrist sets foot on the mount presenting himself to be Jesus Christ the Messiah. You will not stand if you do not know the truths as they are written.

We are going to teach you now Ephesians 1, what this plan is all about and why. Remember we told you there were a third of the sons of God that fell in the age that was, that took Satan's side and rebelled against God. Well, there were two thirds that didn't, and to varying degrees they were overcomers in the age that was. God wants to redeem those souls who were lost in that age, and He has devised this plan whereby those souls who were deceived and fell then could be saved now, because God wishes that none should perish. The one thing that God cannot do is command love, He can't create love, that has to be free will. His children must live him freely.

Alright, let's begin Ephesians 1 in verse 4. Now pay attention because this material is very heavy and deep, but you must understand it. "According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love." [246]

This word "foundation" should be translated from the Greek as overthrow; that overthrow that is indicated in Genesis 1:2, when God had to destroy His creation of the age that was, Satan's overthrow.

### **Foundation:**

**Greek #2601.** katabole, kat-ab-ol-ay'; from Grk 2598; a deposition, i.e., founding; fig. conception:-conceive, foundation.

**Greek #2598.** Kataballo, dat-ab-al'-lo; from Grk 2596 and Grk 906; to throw down;-cast down, lay.

This Greek word katabole is used 11 times in the New Testament, it was translated foundation 10 times, and always in connection with the world: the foundation of the world. We can see from the Greek it would better be translated as the casting down or throwing down of the world, or better

stated, the overthrow of the world. It is also interesting to note the Greek word that was translated as overthrow 3 times in the New Testament is katalluo, which also means to throw down.

Now keep in mind that these passages all speak in the past tense, a done deal. "According as he hath chose us in him before the foundation {overthrow} of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: Having predestinated us unto adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will." [247]

Predestinated, in the past tense, meaning foreordained in the Greek.

### **Predestinated:**

**Greek #4309.** proorizo, pro-or-id'-zo; from Grk 4253 and Grk 3724; to limit in advance, i.e. (fig.) predetermine:-determine before, ordain, predestinate.

**Greek #4253.** pro, pro; a prim. prep.; "fore," i.e. in front of, prior (fig. superior) to:-above, ago, before, or ever. In comp. it retains the same significations. **Greek #3724.** horizo, hor-id'-zo; from Grk 3725; to mark out or bound ("horizon"), i.e. (fig.) to appoint, decree, specify:-declare, determine, limit, ordain. According to the good pleasure of His will. This was His plan from the beginning. God is in control and it is His will. "To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved."

The firstfruits, in other words. Who are the firstfruits? The elect. Those who overcame in the age that was, who stood and warred in battle and were overcomers against Satan in the age that was. They are the firstfruits. And for this age, it is God's will and plan that according to His good pleasure, those elect have been predestined, foreordained. They have already been judged.

"In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; Having made known unto us the mystery of

his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself." [248]

This is the mystery of His will. There was an age before, many fell, and He has brought them through this flesh age to redeem them back to Himself through the Messiah, Jesus Christ the savior, rather than to destroy them.

Our job in understanding the mystery is to present the true gospel. Not the doctrines and false teachings of men that you get from the pulpit today. Dig into God's living word and prove these things out for yourself, always taking it back to the Greek or Hebrew so that you, yourself can know the truth. You, yourself are responsible for these things. It is your very own soul that is at stake here. How much do you value your own soul? Enough to check these things out for yourself?

Let's quickly recap what we have learned about these three world ages from the Scriptures, God's word, His living letter to you, for you must understand these things if you are to stand in the days soon to come. There are three world ages. There was the age that was, this present age, and the age to come. In the age that was, all the souls that were ever created or will ever be created, were created.

In the beginning there was a perfect harmony. The stars of heaven sang, the sons of God were all joyful and rejoicing. Then Satan as we learned, with pride being found in him, decided that he would ascend up on high and be like the most high, that he would sit in the sides of the north, God's side. Satan began then with his one world government system and his religious system to usurp worship for himself.

He wanted the mercy seat for himself, to be like the most high. Subsequently a third of God's children fell, they rebelled, they took Satan's side and were deceived by him into rebelling against God. There were also two thirds who didn't rebel, e v e r them, but thirds who not much is mentioned of they did stay



with the Father and did not choose Satan. They stood against Satan, they abhorred him from the beginning. Now this is important because you must understand that yes, there was a third that fell, bringing about that tohuw va bohuv, that destruction of the age that was, whereby we are introduced into this age in Genesis 1:2 when God begins to rejuvenate and replenish the earth.

This plan being because He did not want to destroy his children, though they were rebellious. He destroyed that age and created this age whereby those souls that fell in the age that was could be put into flesh bodies, with the memories of that past age blotted out. Born of a woman in this age, innocent, whereby they could decide whom they were going to serve, whom they would choose; Jesus Christ the savior, the Messiah, or Satan.

As we approach these end days, this same scenario is going to play out once more, the same as it was in the age that was. Satan is using the same tools that he used in the age that was, the same basic plan, a one world government system.

The one world government system that you hear talked about and praised so highly by our own leaders clear from the president on down, ushering in this new age if you will, this one worldism, governed by one body, the United Nations. Satan is using the United Nations.

It is the political beast spoken of in Revelation 13, the second beast spoken of there is the religious beast, antichrist, Satan himself. Satan's main tool and weapon has always been religion, for he wants to be worshipped as God, presenting himself as the Messiah. Why? Because he has always wanted the mercy seat, and that is Christ's, and he wants the worship and the honour and the glory of that position, and that's what he's been after from the beginning.

We pray that this study has been a blessing to you, and that the Holy Spirit has revealed to you these deeper things, the mystery of these three world ages that have always been in God's word.

## **Question: What Does the Bible Mean When It Talks about the "Son of God," and the "Sons of God?"**

**Answer:** The term "Son(s) of God" has a basic meaning, but it also has quite a few different applications. The phrase is used in Eastern cultures even today to refer to those who have no earthly father, especially of orphans.

The term was applied to Christ, because He had no earthly father. This may be taken in at least two different ways. First, some may have called him by the term to indicate that His supposed father Joseph had died while Jesus was young, thus making Him an orphan in their eyes. Secondly, this could be a reference to the fact that Jesus was born of a virgin and had no earthly father right from the beginning. The term is used in Job 38:7 and 32 in reference to the star constellations, which were animals and persons pictured in the stars. Since they were the creation of God, having no earthly father, they are called "sons of God."

Perhaps the most important usage of the term as far as the Identity message is concerned in Christ's marriage to Israel at Mount Sinai. Jesus Christ is the Groom; Israel is His Bride. Jesus promised to bless, honour, and protect her, and to give her many children,[249] while Israel promised to submit to His authority in obedience to His Law.[250] It is important that we recognize that Israel as a political entity and corporate unit is the Bride, while the individual Israelites are the offspring of that marriage relationship, or children of Israel and of God.

However, we read later in the Scriptures that God divorced Israel,[251] which served to make all the Israelite citizens illegitimate as far as being sons of God was concerned. This divorce from God also revoked her right to the name "Israel" that God had given to His wife as her "married name." From then on, these descendants of Abraham were just "gentiles." This is why the New Testament writings, especially Romans 9-11, call divorced Israel by the term "gentiles." They are legally classified with the non-Israel "nations." The reason for Israel's divorce was her infidelity, in that she

began following the laws of Baal and Molech. In effect, she "married" other gods. Now God's Law in Deuteronomy 24:1-5 makes it plain that when a husband divorces his wife, and she remarries, he cannot go and claim her again to be his wife. So once divorced and remarried, Israel could not be claimed again by Christ. That is, unless both her husbands were dead.[252] Isaiah 53 tells how Christ, the original Husband died, and Isaiah 54 tells how Israel thus became a "widow." [253]

The death of Christ made Him legally eligible to remarry Israel, but the problem is, Israel still had to await the death of Baal, her present husband, before she is legally eligible to remarry Christ. That is why the "marriage" of the Bride did not take place right after the death of Christ. That event must await the repentance of Israel and the destruction of false religion from her midst.

Now, all this was to make this point: Legally speaking, the descendants of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob (that is, The Anglo-Saxon, Germanic, Scandinavian, Celtic and kindred peoples, as a corporate unit) is not the Bride yet. She has been betrothed, but the marriage is yet future. And in the same way, most Israelite individuals are not legally the sons of God. Most of our people still worship Baal and follow his laws.

This state of affairs will continue until our people call for the true national repentance prophesied to take place some day, where the people renounce Baal and forsake his laws for those of Christ. In that day Baal will Die! But you can become a legal son of God now, by rejecting the rulership of Baal in your life and placing yourself in covenant relationship with Jesus Christ. That means vowing to follow His Law in obedience, just as our forefathers did at Mount Sinai. (No if that seems to contradict other things we have said concerning the two covenants, Old and New, it's because we don't have time or space to give you the whole story present, because it would take volumes. Both Old and New covenants are important in our lives, and the exclusion of either one can be very damaging. We must mainly keep in mind that the Old Covenant is subordinate to the New).

Those who individually separate themselves from the family of Baal and join the family of Christ are "firstfruits" [254] of the entire nation of Israel,

which God will turn because of the New Covenant. You who are firstfruits have become legal sons of God here and now. John 1:12 says, "But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name." And that means you are expected to renounce the present husband (Baal) of your mother Israel. Now you are sons and daughters of God, because you have no earthly father. Your Father is Jesus Christ, who will soon marry the nation itself.

### **Question: My Children Are Coming Home from School Now All Sorts of Halloween Material. What Shall We Do about This?**

**Answer:** Halloween ("All Holy Evening") is the most sacred day of the religion of Witchcraft, which is a very popular religion in America and around the world. When the schools promote it, they are promoting this religion, just as they promote Baalism every Christmas with the pagan trappings. You see, only the Christian Religion is outlawed in our public schools, and only the Christian trappings are outlawed as well. The schools actually promote the religion of Baal and Witchcraft.

You might want to fight it on the basis that the schools are promoting religion, and perhaps add teeth to it by asking for equal time in the promotion of Christianity. But in order for you to fight this properly, you have to be able to prove that these things are actually religious rituals.

Hallowe'en, or "All Souls' Eve," is the day before All Hallows, or All Saints' Day. In the pagan religion of the middle ages, November 1st was their New Year's Day and Halloween was New Year's Eve. Winter was coming, and this day honoured the sun god, Samhain, the Lord of the Dead. They believed that this was the time when the dead returned to walk among the living.

Hence, we have the "ghost" costumes and masks to portray demons. The people would set out food in little shelters overnight, in order to provide these "ghosts" with food and shelter, for if they failed to do this, these wandering spirits would haunt them, i.e., play tricks on them. Now, if you



follow this religion, you will no doubt want your children to perpetuate this tradition by sending them out "trick-or-treating."

Did you ever wonder what black cats have to do with bad luck and Halloween? Cats were sacred in this pagan religion, because they believed that cats had once been human beings, but that they had been changed into cats as punishment for their evil deeds. (They believed in reincarnation - a belief which came directly from the Jewish Cabala.) The black cats were the worst of the offenders.

That is why in witchcraft black cats are highly honoured and are considered to possess great powers. Whereas in ancient times they used to use human skulls with lighted candles in them, now they only use "jack-o-lanterns" to get the point across. This is no doubt due to the shortage of skulls that developed when the religion became so popular.

It is common knowledge that "satan-worshippers" and those involved in witchcraft use these in their ceremonies to conjure up spirits and "demons." How many of our people blindly follow the religious trappings of witchcraft every Halloween? If anyone had set out a jack-o-lantern or a skull and candle in the days of Moses, they would have been executed immediately for witchcraft. Christians have no business perpetuating that sordid religion.

We have read publications which promotes Halloween on the grounds that it commemorates the flood of Noah's day, and that we should celebrate that great event of God's righteous judgment upon the earth. Well, it is true that the flood is the origin of the celebration, but as all the trappings clearly show, the celebration is in commemoration of the sinners that died in the flood. Those who died were considered to be martyrs of witchcraft. Halloween is the evening before "All Saints' Day," showing conclusively that this religion honours those who died in the flood as "saints."

On May 13th, 610 A.D. Pope Boniface IV rededicated the Roman pantheon (pagan temple) to the Virgin Mary and the Christian martyrs, or saints. This day was observed as All Saints' Day until Pope Gregory III changed it to November 1st in 834 A.D. to coincide with the day the pagans had dedicated to their martyrs in the deluge. This was in keeping

with the usual Catholic policy to "convert the heath" by incorporating their religions. We believe if you will carefully explain the significance of the Halloween rituals to your children (but be careful not to give them nightmares), and read them in Deuteronomy 18:9-14, being careful to explain the strange words, they will agree they should not observe this day.

## **Question: What Is the Definition of the Identity Message?**

**Answer:** The "Identity Message" is the message teaching the True Identity of the Biblical Israelites. It is a part of the Gospel of the Kingdom, which concerns the Kingdom of God on the Earth.

There are various aspects of the Gospel of the Kingdom, since every kingdom (by definition) must have:

- 1).** A King. This aspect can be called the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the King.
- 2).** A territory over which the King exercises his sovereignty. This begins with the land (here on earth (where Israelites reside), but it will eventually spread until it fills the whole earth.[255]
- 3).** A law to define justice and morality in the land, by which that sovereignty is made effective. This is the Law of Moses as interpreted by the Prophets and Apostles (as they were moved by the Holy Spirit) and by Jesus Christ Himself, the Lawgiver.
- 4).** Citizens and their relative duties and positions of authority as defined by Law. This is where the Identity message comes to focus, for we must be able to identify the True Israelites in order to know where the territories lie and the people God has promised to return to repentance. On the basis of that promise and that repentance, Israelites are the prime inheritors of the kingdom. However, this also is where

we must learn the place of the other peoples of the earth in relation to Israel.

"When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel. For the Lord's portion is his people; Jacob is the lot of his inheritance." [256]

The moment we speak of citizens of the Kingdom, we are speaking of "the Gospel of Salvation," which has both a national and a personal aspect.

Question: The Bible says the Battle of Armageddon will be fought in the Valley of Jehoshaphat. Well, that Valley is most certainly not in the U.S. so in the Light of that alone, how can we be Israel?

Answer: The "Valley of Jehoshaphat" is mentioned in Joel 3, verses 2 and 12 in the prophetic destruction of the enemies of Israel at the end of the age. Revelation 14 should be read with Joel 3, since they are talking about the same event, and John even uses the same terminology.[257]

It is clear from Revelation 14:8 that John is speaking of the end-time destruction of "Babylon," so Joel must be speaking of Babylon as well. So our question is this: Will this last battle be fought against the literal armies of the ancient city of Babylon? Our answer is, NO! Jeremiah 51 prophesies against the ancient city of Babylon, telling us that it will be destroyed and would never be inhabited again. This has literally been fulfilled.

However, that same prophecy describes another "Babylon" called in Revelation "Mystery Babylon." It is a prophetic Babylon, a New Babylon, not the old city, but one which has carried the religious, economic, and

political principles of that ancient city to our modern day. It is now a system, not a city, and it rules over the kings of the earth every bit as much as the ancient city did. So if the armies do not have to invade Israel from the ancient city of Babylon, then why must we assume that the invasion must be against the ancient land of Palestine and the ancient valley of Jehoshaphat?

The fact is, the invasion is of the land where the Biblical Israelites are located. We can prove from history that the Jews in Palestine are not the Biblical Israelites, and we can also prove that the nations of western Europe and America (and other Western nations) are descended from the tribes of Israel.

In 2 Samuel 7:10 the prophet Nathan told King David at the height of the old Israel empire that God had appointed a place to plant Israel, where they would "move no more." That was not the old land, since they were "moved" later to Babylon and Assyria in the captivities. Thus, it had to be a New Land. That necessitates a new "valley of Jehoshaphat" as well. And the only way we can know positively where this new "valley" is, is to know where the real Israelites have been regathered and where Bible prophecy centres today.

### **Question: What is the relationship between the Church, Israel, and non-Israelites in the Kingdom of God?**

**Answer:** The word "Church" is one of the English Translations of the New Testament Greek Word "Ekklesia," which means "The Called-Out Ones."

The word has a general usage, sometimes unrelated to the "church" as we know it. For instance, in Acts 19:32, 39, and 41 "ekklesia" is translated "assembly" in reference to the idolatrous (Jewish) silversmiths that Demetrius had called together to organize a mob against Paul. They were anything but Christian! So "ekklesia" carries with it the connotation of purpose. In other words, we should keep in mind the purpose of the calling and that there are different callings with different races, nations, and individuals. The "ekklesia" (Church) was in existence long before the day

of Pentecost. Acts 7:38 says that there was an "ekklesia" in the wilderness, referring to Israel that had been "called out of Egypt." Jesus used the term 3 times in Matthew 16:18 and twice in Matthew 18:17. This too was before the day of Pentecost, and the "Church" Jesus referred to was the congregation of Israel, or their representatives (the jury that was called out to judge the dispute).

**Hebrews 2:12** is a New Testament quotation of Psalm 22:22. Hebrews uses the Greek word "ekklesia" (Church), while the Old Testament equivalent is "qahal" (usually translated "Congregation"). So we can conclude that the nation of Israel is a body of called-out ones, or "ekklesia."

Although Israel is a church, so also are the believers within Israel. Both have a calling, and both are distinct and important. Israel has a national calling, while the true Christian believers in Israel have a special calling to lead Israel to God. We should not limit the word "ekklesia" to one body of people, because the Scriptures apply it in different ways.

To limit the word to mean only believers does violence to the calling of racial Israel. To limit the word to mean only Israel as a Race or Nation destroys the calling of the believers of both Israel and non-Israel. There have always been non-Israelites who had faith in Christ. This was true in the Old Testament (read the book of Nineveh repented, both "man and beast" in verse 8, as well as in the New Testament in Matthew 15:21-28 with Mark 7:26-27).

On the other hand, there have always been unbelievers in Israel for the prophets to denounce. Will God bless unbelieving Israelites along with the believers? Will God cause all non-Israelites automatically because they are not of the Israel Church? Absolutely not! Perhaps the best Bible statements concerning the relationship of Israel with the rest of the world come from Christ Himself:

- 1). Matthew 13:44: "Again, the Kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure (Israel - Exodus 19:5) hid in a field (the world - Matthew 13:38); the which when a man (Christ - Matthew

13:37) hath found, he hideth (Psalm 83:3), and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath,[258] and buyeth that field (the world)."

2). Matthew 15:21-28: In this passage a woman of Canaan sought help from Jesus. In verse 24 Jesus answered her: "I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel." This "put-off" shows clearly that she was not an Israelite woman. She still persisted, though, and Jesus said again, "It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs."

This verse was clarified in Mark's version. Mark 7:27 says, "Let the children first be filled; for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it unto the dogs."

So the reason Jesus was putting off this woman was because He was called to preach to Israel first. Note that Christ did not utterly cast her out. It was a matter of priority, not total exclusion. And at the woman's continued persistence and humility, Christ granted her request on the basis of her faith. This present age is one in which God is dealing mainly with Israel. He is giving "bread" to the children first.

After Israel has repented, and after Jesus has remarried her, then we will see a much greater fulfillment of Isaiah 2 and Micah 4, during which time the Law will go forth from Zion and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem (New Jerusalem, not the old one). Where will it go? to the rest of the world ("the field").

**Question: Will Protestants and Catholics united to form a World Church that will attempt to suppress all other religions?**

**Answer:** These churches are already largely united, doctrinally speaking.

Most preaching on this subject is based upon the futurist interpretation of Revelation, in which the "antichrist" will soon rise and form a world church and kill anyone who refuses to join it. But if that is the case, then

why worry at all? After all, according to most futurist theology, the church will not be here anyway during the oppressive reign of the "antichrist." We do not believe that this great united church will be any worse than the World Council of Churches is today. For one thing, too many Christians have already been forewarned of such a day and would not join. Many have been taught that this is somehow connected with the "mark of the beast," so they would be fearful of losing their salvation by joining such an organization.


This interpretation of the future "world church of the antichrist" has been used for two related purposes. First, it blinds people to the fact that the "antichrist" is already ruling the world; and secondly, it gets people to join "the true church" (meaning their own, of course) as a means of controlling the people.

### **Question: What Is the Difference between the Catholic Church and the Protestant Churches?**

**Answer:** There are very few Protestant churches left in the world. They have largely been replaced by what are known as fundamentalists, Pentecostal, liberal, and many other various sects. They may still refer to themselves as "Protestant," but they hold very few (if any) of the major doctrines of the original Protestants of the reformation.

Catholic theology teaches that Christ's work for us has made the gift of the Holy Spirit available to believers. (So far so good). But then it teaches that in order for a sinner to be justified, he must receive an infusion of righteousness (grace) by the Holy Spirit. God then pronounces the believer righteous, because of the work that the Holy Spirit has done in him. In other words, Catholics teach that a man is justified before God only when the Holy Spirit has given that man a righteous nature.

The so-called "Holiness movement" that adopted this doctrine calls it "sinless perfection." Most of the Protestant reformers were once devout Catholics, and their might to enough holiness



they tried with all a p p r e h e n d in their lives in

order that they could know that the Holy Spirit (by grace!) had indeed given them an infusion of righteousness. However, being honest men, they reorganized that the "old man" was still present. They only found sin in their hearts in the form of pride, selfishness, unbelief, unresponsiveness to God's love, and lack of faith; and they finally despaired of every being justified before God. God then revealed to them from Romans 1:17, chapters 3, 4, and 5, and other Scripture that righteousness was imputed to them, rather than infused into their nature. It was the imputation of Jesus' righteousness, not any "new" righteousness of their own, that made them acceptable to God.

With this new light came also the realization that one need not be inherently immortal (that is, have an immortal soul, or nature) to be acceptable either. Most of the Reformers (except for Calvin and his followers) viewed the immortal soul doctrine as just another error of the Catholic doctrine of self-worth, as opposed to justification by the worth of Christ.

The third major distinction between Catholic and Protestant theology was the doctrine of the priesthood of the believer. The Protestants taught there was one God and one Mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus,[259] and that any "priest" (Pope) insinuating himself between men and God was an "antichrist" (their words).

These three major distinctions have been almost entirely lost, especially in the last century. The doctrine of the entire "holiness movement" (Pentecostal, Nazarene, Methodist, C & M A, etc.) as well as many other churches, all teach the old Catholic doctrine of an infusion of righteousness in one form or another. The Catholic doctrine of immortality is taught by nearly all churches, including such as the Mormon "church," which also adds that man preexisted in heaven before Adam was created.

Many also teach that the believer must join their church or denomination, be baptized by an organization minister, and follow and support the head (or heads) of the organization. Thus, although they may name no "Pope," they have made their organization the Pope (or "antichrist"). Doctrinally



speaking, there is little difference between the Catholic and most so-called "Protestant" churches today. Most must be considered false churches.

**Question: The Bible Has a Lot to Say about the Wicked. Their Monstrous Greed and Selfishness Is Running Rampant. What Is God Doing about These Criminals?**

**Answer:** Those wicked criminals happen to be God's servants, according to the scriptures.

All that greed and selfishness is well described by the prophet Joel, where they are called locusts, cankerworms, caterpillars, and palmerworms, "my great army which I (God) sent among you." [260]

These wicked people are the worms and parasites that do nothing but feed themselves greedily. God has sent them among us because of our refusal to obey His Law.[261] These wicked people think that they are doing this just because they want to rob us and get rich off our labor; they do not understand that God is the One who is directing them to do this against us.[262]

Ezekiel 38:4 tells us that God is actually putting hooks into their jaws and dragging them to America to rob us. All of this is because we have refused the Law of God, and thus we are under the curses of the Law for disobedience. Fortunately for us, the Bible also tells us that one day this plunder will all end in their (the wicked) final destruction.

This will occur as soon as our nation repents and turns to His Law. It is a great comfort to know that all these wicked enemies are under the absolute control of the God who loves us. We know then that God has the power to stop them at the exact moment He has planned to save us.

**Question:**  
**9:7-8, We**  
**That**



**In Acts**  
**Read**  
**When**

**God Struck Paul down on His Way to Damascus (Resulting in Paul's Conversion), His Companions Heard the Voice of God but Saw No One. However, When Paul Recounts the Story in Acts 22:9, He Says That the Others Saw the Light, but Did Not Hear the Voice. How Do We Resolve This Apparent Contradiction?**

**Answer:** Assuming the Bible does not contradict itself, we can only conclude that Acts 9:7 means that Paul's companions heard a sound, but could not distinguish the words that were being spoken to Paul.

Thus, they heard not the voice. In Acts 22:9 Paul means that his companions did indeed hear the sound of the voice, though they did not understand the words.

We have another example in Scripture where God's voice was heard from heaven was heard, but the people did not understand the message. It is found in John 12:28-30, where Jesus prays: "Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again. The people therefore that stood by and heard it, said that it thundered; others said, An angel spake to Him. Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes."

So we see that in this case the people again heard the voice, but many thought it was thunder. They "heard" the voice, but they did not really hear it either. The word "voice" in both John 12 and Acts 9 comes from the Greek word "*phonay*." It can refer to a sound of any kind, not just vocalized sound.

For example, in Acts 2:2 on the day of Pentecost "there came a sound (Greek: *echos*) from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting." Then in verse 6, reading from a literal translation, it says, "Now this voice (Greek: *phonay*) having come, the multitude came together and were confounded."

The multitude heard the sound of this "wind" and saw how it seemed to fill this particular house where the disciples were meeting, and so they

gathered around the house to see what was going on. Verse 2 says that this sound resembled a rushing wind, but verse 6 calls it a "voice," phonay, the same term used in Acts 9 and 22.

**Question: I Understand That so-called "Converted Jews" Use the Name "Yashua" Instead of Jesus Christ. Is That Not Proof That the Name "Yashua" Is the Correct Name, Rather than Jesus Christ?**

**Answer:** It is more likely proof of the opposite.

We believe that almost all so-called "Christian Jews" are deceivers. This is immediately suspected when one examines their preaching and "testimonies." They spend most of their time and effort praising the Jewish people and telling their "gentile" listeners in a thousand different ways that Christ was a Jew and the Jews are God's Chosen People.

Also, Jews are taught from childhood never to utter the name of Christ, who they are taught was the bastard son of a Roman soldier and Mary (whom the Jews claim was a prostitute). They are taught that "Jesus Christ" is the false god of the Christians and that the Christians are the enemies of the Jews. If they do say the name "Jesus Christ," they are always to spit, so that in so doing they wash their mouth out with spittle and are cleansed from uttering such a "blasphemous name."

"Today the Gentile Christians who claim of holy right have been led in the wrong path. We, of the Jewish Faith have tried for centuries to teach the Gentiles a Christ never existed, and that the story of the Virgin and of Christ is, and always has been, a fictitious lie.

In the near future, when the Jewish people take over the rule of the United States, legally under our god, we will create a new education system, providing that our god is the only one to follow, and proving that the Christ story is a fake—Christianity will be abolished." [263]

On one of Merv Griffin's shows he asked a guest to read the next announcement. The guest, a Jew, looked up and said, "Oh, you would ask me to say that," and remained silent. Griffin then had to read it himself, and it turned out to be an introduction of another guest, including his last starring role, which was in "Jesus Christ, Superstar." The Jew apparently refused to read it, because it contained the Name "Jesus Christ."

It hardly makes sense to accuse Jews of avoiding a "false" Name of our Savior whom they hate. They would more likely hate the true Name, just as they hate His own Person.

Our conclusion is that the use of "Yashua" by these deceiving "Christian Jews" is so they can avoid saying the true Name as much as possible, while still deceiving Christians.

### **Question: What Is the Difference between a Semite, a Hebrew, an Israelite, and a Jew?**

**Answer:** A Semite (or, "Shemite") is someone descended from Shem, one of the sons of Noah. A Hebrew is someone descended from Heber (or, "Eber"), one of the Great-Grandsons of Shem. So all Hebrews are Semites, but not all Semites are Hebrews.

Six generations after Heber, Abraham was born in his line, so Abraham was both a Hebrew and a Semite, born of the line of Heber and Shem. Isaac was born of Abraham; then Jacob of Isaac. Jacob's name was changed to "Israel," and he fathered 12 sons. His sons and their descendants are called Israelites, and they would be both Semitic and Hebrew.

However, this would not make either Abraham or Isaac "Israelites." Some, who interchange the words Jew and Israelite, call Abraham a Jew, even though Abraham was not even an Israelite, and the word "Jew" is not used in the Bible until 1,000 years after Abraham. One of Jacob-Israel's children was Judah (Heb., Yehudah). His descendants were called Yehudim ("Judahites"). In Greek this read Ioudaioi ("Judeans").

The confusing factor is that almost all Bible translations employ the word "Jew," which is a modern, shortened form of the word "Judahite." Every time you come to the word "Jew" in the Old Scriptures, you should read "Judahite;" and every time you come to the word "Jew" in the New Scriptures, you should read it as "Judean." Once you have those proper translations in mind, then we have to interpret those words further, because they can have more than one meaning, depending on the context. In the Old Testament, the word "Judahite" has three distinct usages;

- (1) One who is of the tribe of Judah in a racial sense;
- (2) One who is a citizen of the southern "House of Judah," including the tribes of Benjamin and Levi. Thus, this word can be used either tribally (racially) or geographically (nationally).
- (3) This is also used in a religious sense of those who followed the religion of Judah. At the time of Esther, many non-Israelites "became Jews" (that is, Judahites) as the result of the Judahite victory.[264] In the New Testament, the Greek word Ioudeos should be translated "Judean." Again, this term was used in the same manner:

- (1) One who is of the tribe of Judah in the racial sense;
- (2) One who is a citizen of the province of Judea (as opposed to Galilee and Samaria), as is shown in John 7:1. This usage is geographical, and it applied also to the non-Israelite citizens of Judea who had been incorporated into the nation in 135 B.C.; And
- (3) A follower of the religion of Judah as given by Moses and the prophets. This usage is found in Romans 2:28-29. Most churches today make no distinction between these terms. One of their arguments is that the Apostle Paul said in Romans 11:1 that he was



an "Israelite," and then in Philippians 3:5 he called himself "a Hebrew of the Hebrews." Therefore, they say, the terms are identical, and by implication they include the word "Jew" as well. However, Paul was also a Benjamite,[265] but the fact that he descended from Benjamin, Israel, and Heber did not mean that all of these men were the same person. Therefore, we can say:

- 1). All Israelites are Hebrews and Semites.
  
- 2). Only a few of the Israelites were called Jews (or, Judahites, Judeans).
  
- 3). Many non-Israelites were called Jews (Judahites, Judeans) simply because they lived in Judah or claimed to follow the religion of the Judeans.

### **Question: Was Jesus a Jew? What about the Apostles?**

**Answer:** Jesus is really "The Son of God."

However, He could be called "Judahite" since He was born in David's line of the tribe of Judah,[266] or a "Judean" or "Galilean" from the geographic areas with which He was associated.

Jesus' earthly parents were Judahites (of the tribe of Judah) living in Nazareth of Galilee. Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea [267], and spent some time in Egypt, [268] but His childhood and earthly ministry were in Galilee except when He went to Jerusalem for the feasts and to be put to death by "Mine enemies."

Jesus is called a "Jew" only once in the NT [269] and "King of the Jews" several times. The Greek word is "ioudaios" and Strongs Concordance says, "in a sense of belonging to a country, Judea." It is a geographical term like Alabama or Texan. Wherever "Jews" appears in the NT it would be more correct to read it "Judean." As to the Apostles, in Matthew 26:69-73 Peter was accused of being with "Jesus of Galilee" and told "thy speech bewrayeth thee," indicating Galileans even spoke a different

dialect! According to Nehemiah 11, Galilee was settled by Benjamites after the return from Babylon centuries before. All the Apostles were Benjamites except Judas, the only one who might be called "a Jew" today. Later Paul identified himself as being from Benjamin [270]

### **Question: Why did Jesus say that Salvation was of the Jews?**

**Answer:** The verse in question here is John 4:22, which is better translated, "Salvation is from the Judeans."

In Luke 2 we read the story of how God had revealed to an old man named Simeon that he would see the Christ before he died. When Jesus was brought to him for dedication, he immediately recognized that this was the Christ, and he said in verse 30, "For mine eyes have seen thy Salvation." Jesus Himself is our Salvation, and He came from the tribe of Judah. Thus, John 4:22 is actually a reference to Christ Himself, not to the "Jews" of today, as so many modern preachers imply.

This is verified by many other passages which show plainly that our salvation does not depend on any man or group of men, but only on the Christ born of the line of Judah.

### **Question: Preachers and Bible Teachers All Say, "We Owe the Jews so Much." What Do We Owe the Jews?**

**Answer:** At last count we owe the Jewish Bankers about 6 trillion dollars (until we proclaim God's Jubilee year and cancel all debts). That does not include the debts of our Israel Brethren in the rest of the world.

### **Question: In the Book of Esther, Were Esther and Mordecai Jews (Babylonian Style) or Were They Israelites?**

**Answer:** In Esther 2:5 Mordecai is identified as a Benjamite.

He is called a "Jew" from the Hebrew word for Judahite, so he must have been a citizen of the southern "House of Judah" which was taken captive by the Babylonians. In verse 7 we find that Esther (or "Hadassah") was "his uncle's daughter," which would make her a Benjamite also. The term "Jew" in the Book of Esther should read "Judahite" as in other Old Testament books. This is not a book about the ancestors of the modern Jews, but of Israelites of the "House of Judah." Although modern Jews may claim the book, that does not make it theirs.

**Question: Matthew 27:51-54 Seems to Indicate That There Was a Resurrection of Some Saints at the Same Time Christ Died or Was Raised from the Dead. Many Ministers Says That Jesus Took These Christians to Heaven with Him, and He Uses This Passage to Prove His Point. What Can I Tell Him?**

**Answer:** We are given only a few clues as to what actually occurred here, since Matthew is the only writer who refers to this event directly, unless we take John 5:25 to be prophetic of this event.

The passage does not say that these saints received immortality, and it does **NOT** say (nor does any other passage) that they went to heaven with Christ. Those conclusions are your minister's own personal interpretation. We believe that this resurrection was limited to a very few people. If it had included all Old Testament believers, as some teach, Jerusalem would have been rather crowded until Jesus left for heaven 40 days later. (There would have been tens or hundreds of millions). The resurrection in Matthew 27:21-54 then would have been of a few saints raised like Lazarus as miraculous witness to Christ's resurrection. The case of the raising of Lazarus shows us that it is possible to raise a man to life without making him immortal. [271]

Lazarus lived for quite a while after Jesus raised him, but he later died in Marseilles, France, where he had ministered for many years. His grave is



still there for all to see. 1 Corinthians 15:23 gives us the order and timing of Christ's resurrection in relation to "they that are Christ's" (i.e., Christians, including the believers in the Old Testament period): "But every man in his own order; Christ the firstfruits; afterward, they that are Christ's at his coming."

Since Paul was writing many years after Christ's first coming, he was obviously speaking of His second coming. It is possible that Paul had this very issue in mind when he wrote to Timothy about two men named Hymenaeus and Philetus, "who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already, and overthrow the faith of some." [272]

These men obviously taught that a resurrection of believers had already taken place. Paul viewed this doctrine as a threat to our faith in the future resurrection. It is therefore much more credible for us to believe that the resurrection to immortality is yet future, "that they without us should not be made perfect." [273] It will take place when Christ returns to save His people from their enemies and rule over His Bride in the Kingdom Age.

### **Question: How Can One Explain to Others the 1500-mile Cube That John States Is a City in Revelation 21:16, If the Old Jerusalem Is Not the New Jerusalem?**

**Answer:** The picture we are given in Revelation 21:10-27 is highly symbolic. It should be read in conjunction with Zechariah 2, in which the New Jerusalem is not a regular city at all, but is rather an entire kingdom, the nation of Israel, "the Bride, the Lamb's Wife."

It comes complete with citizens, laws, a King, and boundaries (walls), and it includes many "towns." [274] The "foundations" of this city are the 12 Apostles [275]. We doubt that they will be physically holding up a 1500 cubic mile city in the Kingdom! The 144 cubit high wall around the city is a "wall of fire" [276]; that is, it is bounded by God's Law (the "fiery Law" of Deuteronomy 33:2), and God's Law is what keeps the sinners outside of the city, according to Revelation 22:15.

All of these details are symbolic. God is not going to lower a huge cubed city down upon the planet earth with a heavenly crane.

Actually, it is quite possible that the shape of the structure being described there is not a cube at all, but a pyramid with the length and width of the base being equal to the height. The capstone of that pyramid is Christ Himself, who is said to be "the head of the corner" in Matthew 21:42.

Paul tells us in Ephesians 2:19-22 that we Christian Israelites are in the process of being, "built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief corner stone; in Whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy Temple in the Lord." You see, the "capstones" on ancient pyramids were made into temples. Thus, the "building—groweth unto an holy Temple," and that temple is Jesus Christ, our God.[277] The entire structure is symbolic, and to take parts of it literally would be inconsistent and do violence to Scripture.

The point of all this is to say that the numbers which "measure" the city are just as symbolic as are the other details. All of the number of governmental perfection. There are 12 angels guarding 12 gates with 12 pearls on them in a wall that is 144 (12 x 12) cubits high, garnished with 12 stones, representing the 12 tribes of Israel. This wall encircles a "city" 12,000 furlongs high, wide, and long, that is built upon a foundation of the 12 apostles. There will also be 144 (12 x 12) thousand inhabitants of that city representing the 12 tribes of Israel.

The New Jerusalem is the reconstructed house of Israel, and its reconstruction began with the death and resurrection of Christ. When completed during this present age, the "capstone" that was formerly rejected will be set in its rightful place (i.e., Christ will return to rule His Kingdom).

Like the city, foundation, stones, walls, gates, and temple, the numbers used in the book of Revelation are symbolic of the lost house of Israel being regathered under the rulership of Christ to their own land, separated from those who are outside,[278] and protected by the wall of God's Law.

America Is New Jerusalem and New Zion: Before we get into the part of our study, proving that America is New Jerusalem and New Zion spoken of in the Scriptures, I think it would be best to show that much of the Bible is written in allegories. "Then shall the trees of the wood sing out at the presence of the Lord, because he cometh to judge the earth." [279] We know that the trees being spoken of here are people, not actual trees because trees cannot sing. "Yea, the fir trees rejoice at thee, and the cedars of Lebanon, saying, Since thou art laid down, no feller is come up against us." [280]

Again we are faced with the fact that the trees cannot rejoice at the presence of anyone. "For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands." [281]

It does not take a rocket scientist to recognize that trees have no hands! "To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the Lord, that he might be glorified." [282]

This is pretty well self explanatory. "And all the trees of the field shall know that I the Lord have brought down the high tree, have exalted the low tree, have dried up the green tree, and have made the dry tree to flourish: I the Lord have spoken and have done it." [283]

One more, out of many should suffice to show that whenever trees are mentioned in the Scriptures it can and in many cases means people and not actual trees of wood. "And I will destroy her vines and her fig trees, whereof she hath said, These are my rewards that my lovers have given me: and I will make them a forest, and the beasts of the field shall eat them." [284]

I don't think anyone can doubt, that the Blacks, who are the Beast of the Field as spoken of in the Scriptures, are eating our Israel people up through inter-marriages. God has told us that in the latter days He would give His Israel people to the beasts; the black race. "Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will sow the house of Israel and the house of Judah with the seed of man, and with the seed of beast." [285] And when we use the word "serpent" we think of something sly, wicked, evil, cunning, something that hides from us, has venom, that is strong and dangerous. That is why the word serpent is used many times as an allegory in the Scriptures. Thus we can clearly see that it is not at all unusual for a word to be used to illustrate something more impressively. And that is what we are talking about.

Most Christians do not have any trouble with any of these in the various verses of Scriptures, therefore you should have no trouble in understanding what is being presented in this study. The house of God was first located at Shiloh: "...the house of God was in Shiloh." [286]

Then in the Book of Psalms we are told that God forsook, or left Shiloh: "When God heard this, he was wroth, and greatly abhorred Israel: So that he forsook the tabernacle of Shiloh, the tent which he placed among men." [287]

So we can clearly see that God in His wrath left Shiloh, and He would never return there, nor to the tabernacle, which was located at Shiloh. Therefore, it is amazing that the so-called Judeo-Christian preachers will never allow God to leave Jerusalem; which He clearly said that He would do.

"But go ye now unto my place which 'was' in Shiloh, where I set my name at the first, and see what I did to it for the wickedness of my people Israel. And now, because ye have done all these works, saith the Lord, and I spake unto you, rising up early and speaking, but ye heard not; and I called you, but ye answered not; Therefore will I do unto this house (the Temple at Jerusalem), which is called by my name, wherein ye trust, and unto the place (Palestine, Jerusalem and the Temple) which I gave to you and to your fathers, as I have done to Shiloh." [288]

The Bible says to provide a double witness to a thing, therefore, for a second witness: "Then will I make this house 'like Shiloh,' and will make this city (Jerusalem) a curse to all the nations of the earth. [289]

So the priests and the prophets (false priests and prophets, the Judeo-Christian preachers and prophets of that day and time) and all the people heard Jeremiah speaking these words in the house of the Lord. Now it came to pass, when Jeremiah had made an end of speaking all that the Lord had commanded him to speak unto all the people, that the priests and the prophets and all the people took him [290], saying, Thou shalt surely die.

Why hast thou prophesied in the name of the Lord, saying, This house shall be like Shiloh, and this city shall be desolate without an inhabitant? And all the people were gathered against Jeremiah in the house of the Lord." [291]

Have you ever thought about it: If the Jews god is the same one as the Christian's God, then why do they object to prayer to God in the schools? The answer is given in a 1960 court case by a Jewish Lois N. Milman, if Christians would only listen and observe! Jewish pupil objects to prayer in schools. Jewess Lois N. Milman, objected to discussing God in the Miami schools because the talk was about "A God that is not my god." (How true this is) In a court suit she also objected to "having to listen to Christmas carols in the schools." (L.A. Times, July 20, 1960).

This is very very clear, and to deny that God would leave Jerusalem and Palestine is an effort of intellectual dishonesty. Of course God would keep His word as He gave it to Jeremiah, and history proves that He did exactly as He said He would.

We are told: "Again the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, thy brethren, even thy brethren, the men of thy kindred, and all the house of Israel wholly,[292] are they unto whom the inhabitants of Jerusalem (the Jews) have said, Get you far from the Lord [293]: unto us (Jews) is this land (Palestine and Jerusalem) given in possession." [294]

For a second witness: "And the glory of the Lord went up from the midst of the city, and stood upon the mountain which is on the east side of the city. Afterwards the spirit took me up, and brought me in a vision by the spirit of God into Chaldea, to them of the captivity. So the vision that I had seen went up from me. Then I spake unto them of the captivity all the things that the Lord had shewed me. The word of the Lord also came unto me, saying, Son of man, thou dwellest in the midst of a rebellious house, which have eyes to see, and see not; they have ears to hear, and hear not: for they are a rebellious house.

Therefore, thou son of man, prepare thee stuff for removing, and remove by day in their sight; and thou shalt remove from thy place to another place in their sight: it may be they will consider, though they be a rebellious house. Then shalt thou bring forth thy stuff by day in their sight, as stuff for removing: and thou shalt go forth at even in their sight, as they that go forth into captivity.

Dig thou through the wall in their sight, and carry out thereby. In their sight shalt thou bear it upon thy shoulders, and carry it forth in the twilight: thou shalt cover thy face, that thou see not the ground: for I have set thee for a sign unto the house of Israel. And I did so as I was commanded: I brought forth my stuff by day, as stuff for captivity, and in the even I digged through the wall with mine hand; I brought it forth in the twilight, and I bare it upon my shoulder in their sight.

And in the morning came the word of the Lord unto me, saying, Son of man, hath not the house of Israel, the rebellious house, said unto thee, What doest thou? Say thou unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; This burden concerneth the prince in Jerusalem, and all the house of Israel that are among them. Say, I am your sign: like as I have done, so shall it be done unto them: they shall remove and go into captivity." [295] Here we have God testifying that He is leaving Jerusalem and will never return, just as the True Israelites will do. They would be carried into captivity and their way would be hedged up and they would never return to Jerusalem or Palestine either.

Just as God told them: "Moreover I will appoint a place for my people Israel, and will plant them, that they may dwell in a place of their own, and move no more; neither shall the children of wickedness afflict them any more, as beforetime." [296]; "Also I will ordain a place for my people Israel, and will plant them, and they shall dwell in their place, and shall be moved no more; neither shall the children of wickedness waste them any more, as at the beginning." [297]

So it is very clear, that God would remove Israel to another country or place, not in Palestine and that would be their home, and Palestine and Jerusalem would be left for the Arabs who are the descendants of Abraham through his Egyptian wife Hagar. For some reason the Judeo-Christian preachers of today, completely ignore these verses. Of course, we know the reason they ignore them is because of their fear of the Jews, that, and they have stupidly accepted a 501-C3 tax designation that places the church under the control of the federal government.

Yet the Scriptures, clearly show that the fearful and cowardly cannot enter into God's Kingdom, so they are, because of their fear losing their chance to enter therein. "But the fearful (those that are afraid, apprehensive, fainthearted, scared, etc.), and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death." [298]

Now for one other witness: "Thus saith the Lord God; Because the enemy hath said against you, Aha, even the ancient high places are ours in possession: Therefore prophesy and say, Thus saith the Lord God: Because they have made you (Palestine and Jerusalem) desolate, and swallowed you up on every side, that ye might be a possession unto the residue of the heathen, and ye are taken up in the lips of talkers, and are an infamy of the people (the Jews who without a doubt, and cannot be disputed that they are talkers and are an infamy to the world):

Therefore, ye mountains (nations) of Israel, hear the word of the Lord God; Thus saith the Lord God to the mountains, and to the hills, to the rivers, and to the valleys, to the desolate wastes, and to the cities that are forsaken, which became a prey and derision to the residue of the heathen

that are round about; Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Surely in the fire of my jealousy have I spoken against the residue of the heathen, and against all Idumea (the Jewish Encyclopedia says that Edom - Idumea, is in modern Jewry), which have appointed my land into their possession with the joy of all their heart, with despiteful minds, to cast it out for a prey." [299] Now let us turn to America and New Jerusalem. In the Book of Micah we find he wrote of a Place called Zion. "Be in pain, and labour to bring forth, O daughter of Zion [300], like a woman in travail: for now shalt thou go forth out of the city, and thou shalt dwell in the field, and thou shalt go even to Babylon." [301]

Now turn to Zechariah where we find: "Deliver thyself, O Zion, that dwellest with the daughter of Babylon." [302] Most Christians who attend church, or listen to the television evangelist are familiar with the name Zion. They preach about it; there are songs in the song books about it; and almost every mention of it is about a beautiful, peaceful and serene place where anyone, not just Christians would desire to go.

But here are two passages of scripture where Zion is a place of turmoil and pain; a place that is in need of being freed or delivered from something called Babylon. The Clergy of Organized Religion has told Christians hundreds of times over the years that Zion along and New Jerusalem are Bible names for Heaven. But these teachings become more and more false as we find passages in the scriptures where it is told that both Zion and New Jerusalem in trouble. Which presents an interesting question: How could Heaven be in pain, travail or trouble?

However, all of these scriptures become clear and more understandable when one realizes that the names Zion and New Jerusalem are in actuality the names of the Nation of Regathered Israel. "And I will make her that halted a remnant, and her that was cast far off (Israel) a strong nation: and the Lord (Jesus Christ) shall reign over them in mount Zion from henceforth, even for ever." [303]

Some of the scriptures we will study are about events which have already taken place; some of them are about events which are happening today; and some of them are about events which will happen in the future. Also



in previous chapters we have proven to any who are not Spiritually Blind that America is the "Strong Nation," the Nation of Regathered Israel and is both Zion and New Jerusalem! So you should begin to see, it is America who has gone "even to Babylon," and "dwellest with the daughter of Babylon." In other words America has come under and is even now being controlled by this anti-God, anti-Christ, anti-Christian world powers, spoken of and known in the scriptures as Babylon in both the Old and New Testaments. And what we see happening in America is exactly what was written in God's Holy Word.

Now let's return to Micah: "But in the last days it shall come to pass, that the mountain (nation) of the house of the Lord shall be established in the top of the mountains (the greatest most powerful and blessed nation of all the nations), and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people (Israel) shall flow unto it." [304] Please keep in mind that in Bible prophecy mount or mountain stands for a great nation or a great world power; and hills represent lesser or smaller nations or countries.

To demonstrate this turn to Jeremiah where God condemns the nation of Babylon and He said; "Behold, I am against thee, O destroying mountain (nation)...and I will—make thee a burnt mountain." [305] So here in verse one of Micah chapter four as in Isaiah verse one chapter two we find God saying He will establish the mountain or the nation of the house of the Lord in the top of the mountains or nations.

In other words above the other nations of the earth. So now you can also see and understand that whenever we read the term "the house of the Lord" where it does not mean the actual Temple or the place of worship: It always stands for the House of Israel.

For they are God's house, the people of Israel where God would dwell. "What! know ye not that ye are The Temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?" [306] "for ye are The Temple of the living God." [307] "And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain (nation) of the Lord (the regathered nation of Israel), and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he (Christ) will teach us of his ways,

and we will walk in his paths: for the law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem." [308]

This is not speaking of heaven spoken of so often by the Clergy; but is obviously of a place on The Earth where the people of the world could come and receive instruction and to be taught the Law and the Word of the Lord. Micah then goes on to say; "And he shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plough shares, and their spears into pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more (the end of war or the age of peace). But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make them afraid: for the mouth of the Lord of hosts hath spoken it.[309] For all people will walk every one in the name of his god [310], and we will walk in the name of the Lord our God for ever and ever.[311] In that day, saith the Lord.[312]" [313]

Now let's continue on: "In that day, saith the Lord, will assemble her that halteth, and I will gather her that is driven out, and her that I have afflicted; And I will make her that halted a remnant, and her that was cast far off a strong nation.[314]" [315]

In case you might get the wrong impression the word "remnant" does not necessarily mean "few in number." The Hebrew word actually means "the turned ones" or the ones "turned to God." The Lord said, "And I will make her that halted a remnant, and her that was cast far off a strong nation (He then goes on to name that nation): and the Lord shall reign over them in Mount Zion from henceforth, even for ever." [316]

So here we can see clearly that the place where God would regather Israel and make them a "Strong Nation" is here called "Mount Zion." That it would be God who would bring them to that place and His Rule over them, there, would not cease for ever. God then goes on in Verse 8, "And thou, O tower of the flock, the strong hold of the daughter of Zion, unto thee shall it come, even the first dominion; The Kingdom (of the Lord Jesus Christ) shall come to the daughter of Jerusalem." [317]

This makes sense with what we have studied so far, and from what we know from the study of other Bible Prophecies; that the Kingdom of Christ on Earth, not in Heaven, would begin in and among the regathered Israel people.

The disciples of Christ knew this, for in the first chapter of Acts, we find that Jesus taught them things concerning the Kingdom for forty days after His Resurrection. And before His ascension to Heaven. During this time they asked only one question, at least that is all that is recorded; "wilt thou at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?" [318] The disciples knew To Whom the Kingdom would be restored for, they just did not know when. They were of course familiar with the writings of Micah and with the other prophets of the Old Testament. They knew that Israel had lost the Kingdom because of their disobedience to God, and were divorced and cast off out of Palestine in the dispersion. But they knew also the promise of the future "Restoration" of that Kingdom to Israel.

Turning back again to Micah we have seen that the kingdom would be restored after Israel had been regathered and made a strong nation, and known as the Mountain of the Lord, or Zion or Jerusalem. So when we read in Micah Chapter Four that God would assemble her that halted; gather her that was driven out; that was cast far off a strong nation, we are reading one of the prophecies which was fulfilled in the bringing of our Anglo-Saxon, Germanic, Scandinavian, Celtic and Kindred people to North America; in breaking the ties that bound them to the old country and constituting them a new nation, in one day, July 4, 1776.

The ones who came to America were called a remnant by Micah, or the "turned ones" we would know them today by their "new name" of Christians.

Other prophecies tell us that the Israelites who would found Zion and New Jerusalem would be Christians. Prophecies such as that found in Jeremiah: "Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion: And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding." [319]

This was fulfilled, in America, by (Israelites) who, at its beginning, had the promised Godly Pastors. In Jeremiah Thirty One the "remnant" or "turned ones" are prophesied to be regathered in Zion. "For there shall be a day, that the watchmen upon the mount Ephraim shall cry, Arise ye, and let us go up to Zion unto the Lord our God. For thus saith the Lord; Sing with gladness for Jacob, and shout among the chief of the nations: publish ye, praise ye, and say, O Lord, save thy people, the remnant of Israel. Behold, I will bring them from the north country, and gather them from the coasts of the earth, and with them the blind and the lame, the woman with child and her that travaileth with child together: a great company[320] shall return thither.[321] They shall come with weeping, and with supplications (to ask for something by earnest prayer) will I lead them: I will cause them to walk by the rivers of waters in a straight way (in other words He would give them the Word of God in Truth), wherein they shall not stumble: for I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is my firstborn." [322]

We also have God's Word in Isaiah; "Fear not: for I am with thee: I will bring thy seed from the east, and gather thee from the west; I will say to the north, Give up; and to the south, Keep not back: bring my sons from far, and my daughters from the ends of the earth; (and following is who and what they would be) Even every one that is called by my name (Christ(ian)): for I have created him for my glory, I have formed him; yea, I have made him." [323]

Now we have come to verse 9 in Micah Chapter Four; what do we find? Trouble and pain. "Now why dost thou cry out aloud? is there no king in thee? is thy counsellor perished? for pangs have taken thee as a woman in travail."

Here is this Great Zion Nation where Israel has been regathered. It is in existence. It has been promised a Kingdom. And now the whole complexion of the prophecy changes to a woman in pain and travail. Verse 10: "Be in pain, and labour to bring forth, O daughter of Zion, like a woman in travail (the phraseology would indicate that something was about to be born): for now shalt thou go forth out of the city, and thou shalt dwell in the field, and thou shalt go even to Babylon; there shalt thou

be delivered; there the Lord shall redeem thee from the hand of thine enemies."

Babylon, here, obviously is an enemy of Israel, because she is promised to be delivered from "the hand of thine enemies." In order for Zion to need to be delivered from her enemies it would necessary for Israel to be in the clutches and under the control of her enemies; that is the logical interpretation.

What does it all mean? It means that sometime after a remnant of believing Israelites are regathered, and after they have been made into "a strong nation." That they will be taken captive by their enemies. Their nation, the Zion of Bible prophecy would be the captive of Babylon. Zechariah said Zion would dwell with Babylon and would have to be delivered.

Isaiah called Zion "O captive daughter of Zion." [324] And here we see that Micah writes quite plainly that Zion, the great nation of regathered Israel would be taken captive of something, called in the Bible - Babylon. We have now seen that prophetic Zion is a nation, one which we claim is America. Now we will try to reveal just what that Babylon and what being captive of it is, and just how it has taken control of this great Zion nation, the United States of America.

It is in all likelihood that many of you readers have never thought of America being in captivity. But most of you do know something is wrong, for we certainly are in pain and labour and recent years have proven that the American people have little or no control over their own government.

Therefore, we present you with this question: Is it possible that something, called in the Bible, Babylon, has secretly taken over control of the reigns of our government? If we, the United States, is Zion, and we know that to be true, then Babylon must be here too.

The prophet Isaiah wrote much about Zion and Jerusalem and most of his words to and about it are positive; they are filled with hope and with promise. And many of the passages in Isaiah have been used as the foundation for songs about Zion. They have been used also to create songs about Heaven. Isaiah 52 is one of the chapter directed directly to this entity

called Zion. "Awake, awake; put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the holy city: for henceforth there shall no more come into thee the uncircumcised and the unclean."

This can be directly compared, and often is, with the 21st chapter of Revelation; about the New Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven. and verse 27 reads, "And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life." This seemingly, absolute restriction, on who may enter New Jerusalem is part of what has convinced some of the Clergy of Organized Religion; That New Jerusalem is really Heaven. And that only "dead" Christians may have entry there. And we will admit that Isaiah 52 seems to begin with the same absolute restriction on its inhabitants, by saying, only those who may enter are those who have been circumcised and have been made clean.

In the context of the New Testament that would mean entry would be restricted to only Christian believers. Whether living or dead is not the point here, but they seemingly would have to be scripturally circumcised and scripturally clean.

God goes on in Isaiah, speaking to this Zion, to which the uncircumcised and the unclean will be prohibited entry, in verse 2, "Shake thyself from the dust; arise, and sit down, O Jerusalem: loose thy neck, O captive daughter of Zion."

Here the prophet is talking about this beautiful Zion in verse 1 and then in verse 2 he refers to bands on her neck which must be loosed and then calls her "O captive daughter of Zion." Now listen to verse 3, "For thus saith the Lord, Ye have sold yourselves for nought; and ye shall be redeemed without money."

So Zion, called in verse one Jerusalem of the beautiful garments, the Holy City and a place where the uncircumcised and the unclean will be refused entry. That Zion is a Captive!

She has bands on her neck; she has been "sold." The Zion we are reading about here may seem to be a new one to many, for most, like many of us in the past, have always been taught by the Clergy that Zion was Heaven itself. A beautiful city of gold; the place where Jesus would dwell and rule His Kingdom and that beautiful place where all Christians hope to go when their final days on this earth have come to an end.

We, like you have never been taught about Zion needing deliverance. We have never been taught about Zion needing deliverance, nor have you ever heard about Zion being a place or something which might be captured by something else. Yet when one actually reads the Word of God for himself instead of just listening to the Prophets of Baal, the Clergy of Organized Religion, all sorts of new things come up, which we have never heard before.

We have already made the statement that this Zion is not the Heaven of the Church World. But it is instead a land, a place of the earthly regathering of the Israel Race.

That the prophecies and the description of this Zion fit the United States of America as they fit no other land on the earth. Much less the Bastard State of Israel in the Middle East, which is proving to be more and more like the Nazi's the Jews have presented to the world since World War II. There can be no doubt: America is this New Jer - USA - Lem and New Zion of Bible Prophecy!

Our Anglo-Saxon, Germanic, Scandinavian, Celtic and kindred people who are the True Israelites, have been gathered here from the north country and from the coasts of the earth. God took our forefathers, one of a city, and two of family and He brought them to Zion.

He did in America exactly, what He said He would do with the Israel People when He regathered them in their own land. He made them a great a mighty nation, the greatest and most mighty nation that has ever existed in all of the history of the world from its foundation to the present time; Above all the other nations which are upon the face of the earth. But God also warned that even though Israel was placed in Zion, they would turn

away from hearing His Word and would become captive of their enemies, from which they would have to be delivered.

We believe that America is under that power today and has been since sometime between 1895 and 1899. We have been conquered by an alien race which is robbing and destroying our people. None can, truthfully, deny that the symptoms of captivity are present in the United States, but many will deny the actuality of it. Now we must repeat again and again, because it is so hard for many Christians to understand: The Zion of Bible prophecy is not a place of perfection. At least not in its early stages. We have just read where Isaiah has called it "captive daughter of Zion" and said it had bands on its neck, that it had been "sold" into captivity and had to be delivered from its enemies. Well that seems to be what Micah is writing about here also in verse 9 of Micah chapter 4, "Now why dost thou cry out aloud? is there no king in thee? is thy counsellor perished?"

Now Israel has had many kings and counselors but usually when the prophets speak of one king of Israel, they are speaking of Almighty God. And here counsellor is in the singular "is thy counsellor perished?" If you will remember that beautiful prophesy of Jesus in Isaiah Chapter 9 you will see what this probably means. Isaiah 9:6 reads, "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder (and that would mean that He, Jesus, would be king over Israel): and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace."

So there you have it: Jesus is Israel's King and Jesus is Israel's Counsellor! And here in Micah, God asks Israel in Zion, why are you crying aloud, don't you have a king and a counsellor. He is, in effect, asking Israel; Is your troubles so bad that you think your Savior, your King, your Counsellor is dead?

Take a look at America today. Millions of our people are grieved, frightened and angry about what is happening to their beloved nation and are crying about it. We are being destroyed with crime, with corrupt politicians, with corrupt manipulators of business and stocks; we are being



disarmed in the face of an ever increasing threat from the communist nations.

Parts of our sovereign parts of our nation are being given to other countries by criminals and agents of the enemy in our government. Hundreds of billions of dollars are being forcible taken from our citizens and given, unlawfully, to foreign nations who are in reality enemies of our country. They take other billions of dollars from our workers and are supposedly spending it upon education, health, welfare, military, highways, crime and thousands of other schemes to eliminate our problems.

And to what end? The problems continue to grow and multiply at an ever increasing rate. It is almost as if the money serves as a fertilizer and stimulates the growth of the problems, just as it does to plants, rather than bring an end to them. But to whom do the robbed and plundered people cry out to? Of course; To the government. And God says, "alright Israel in Zion, you are in trouble and I hear your cries. But is your King gone, is your Counsellor dead? Why do you not cry out to Me."

God goes on in Micah 4:9-10, "for pangs have taken thee as a woman in travail. Be in pain, and labour to bring forth, O daughter of Zion, like a woman in travail." Here God is telling Zion to go ahead and suffer the pain, for these are labour pains of birth, this turmoil, this corruption and these things which the people fear are all signs of something being born. He then goes on, "for now shalt thou go forth out of the city, and thou shalt dwell in the field." Here the Zion of prophecy is apparently going to be given into the control of Babylon of Bible prophecy.

Now let us repeat here, this was not a prophecy which was fulfilled when Jerusalem was conquered by Babylon in 500 plus B.C., and taken captive for seventy years and then released. It is true that Micah lived and prophesied about two hundred years before that captivity, but several things preclude its fulfilment in that old Babylonian captivity of so long ago.

**Number 1**, the term used for the time of its fulfilment in verse 1 is "in the last days."

**Number 2**, the sequence of events, the captivity of this Zion would happen after Israel was regathered.

**Number 3**, the reference to the kingdom being given to, or coming to, this place of Israel's regathering. Here called Zion.

According to Jeremiah and Hosea Israel actually lost the kingdom when she was divorced by God, at about the time this prophecy was written. And she did not, and could not have been given the kingdom again in old Babylon.

In Acts 1, several hundred years after that first seventy years of captivity in Babylon the disciples asked Jesus, "wilt thou at this time restore (here we can clearly see that the disciples knew that the Jews were not the legitimate heirs to the kingdom) again the kingdom to Israel (here again the disciples are saying in effect The Jews Are Not Israel!)." [325]

So the kingdom had Not Yet been restored to Israel at the time of Christ. It must be restored later. Then we have the rest of the verses in Micah chapter 4 which when read cannot be fitted in with that old Babylonian captivity. Now let's read on in verse 10, "and thou shalt go even to Babylon; there shalt thou be delivered; there the Lord shall redeem thee from the hand of thine enemies."

Zion will be saved and redeemed while she is a captivity of this prophetic Babylon. verse 11, "Now also many nations are gathered against thee, that say, Let her be defiled, and let our eye look upon Zion."

When Jerusalem was taken captive by Babylon several hundred years before Christ only One Nation came against Jerusalem. But this prophecy, says at this time "many nations are gathered against" her. And they said, "Let her be defiled, and let our eye look upon Zion."

By the homosexual and lesbian concept being pushed upon our people and told that it is legitimate and normal actions of men. By disrupting our educational system and bringing confusion into it to the extent that our

own children are being prevented from learning to read (This because people are more easily manipulated if they cannot research for themselves the truth of a situation or concept being presented to them).

By graft and corruption of politicians at all levels of government. By all sorts of crime, from petty theft to the swindling of thousands of people out of millions of dollars in land fraud, stock manipulations, insurance schemes and etc. Then by not punishing the criminals, but release them back into society to continue their criminal ways, so as to disrupt and demoralize the lives of honest citizens. By convincing our people that "over population" is a great danger, so as to promote the reduction in the White Race through birth control and abortions - The Murder of the Unborn!

By increasing our taxes and deflating our currency, which creates fear in the elderly and disabled who are trapped on fixed incomes. And destroying the incentive to work in the younger. They are trying to build up in our people a fatalism that our Race must give up everything we have, or ever hope to have to aliens, to foreign nations, and to even our enemies who hate us and would destroy us if they only could. It is as if this alien force in America is saying, "Let us all get together and let us defile America."

Which is exactly what God said that the nations would do the Zion of Bible prophecy. That they would gather against her and say, "let her be defiled." Then they would say, "let our eye look upon Zion." The United States of America is perhaps the most looked upon, spied against nation in all of human history since the beginning of time. But listen to what God says in Micah 4:12, "But they know not the thoughts of the Lord, neither understand they his counsel."

In other words, they do not know what God has revealed in His Word, the Bible, of His plan. They only know of their own. "...neither understand they his counsel: for he shall gather them as the sheaves into the floor."

Here is the command to Zion at the very height or depth, as it may be, of her captivity, verse 13, "Arise and thresh, O daughter of Zion: for I will make thine horn iron, and I will make thy hoofs brass: and thou shalt beat

in pieces many people: and I will consecrate their gain unto the Lord, and their substance unto the Lord of the whole earth."

Now this is quite a switch in just a few verses don't you think? All the way from God's Israel people in Zion, in captivity, being almost in total despair; perhaps even to the point of thinking that God is dead and cannot save them, and to the time their enemies are being destroyed and being gathered as sheaves into the floor. This sheaves into the floor phrase also fits the prophecy of Joel when he describe the last battle upon the earth as being fought "in the valley of decision. [326]" [327] Therefore, the prophet is talking of a "valley of threshing." In Isaiah forty one God says at the end of the age He will give Israel a new threshing instrument having teeth, "Behold, I will make thee a new sharp threshing instrument having teeth: thou shalt thresh the mountains (nations), and beat them small, and shalt make the hills as chaff." [328]

Several prophets and Jesus called this final destruction of the wicked on the earth; "the time of the harvest" [329]; "he hath set an harvest for thee" [330]; "the sickle, for the harvest is ripe" [331]; "and in the time of the harvest" [332]; "the sickle, because the harvest is come" [333]; "the harvest of the earth is ripe." [334]

Then in Matthew 13 where the tares are gathered out of the kingdom Jesus says of the wicked, that the angels would, in verse 30 "bind them in bundles."

Now let us continue on with our study of prophetic Babylon; what it is to be and what it is today. And we believe that we can identify this Babylon just as we have identified prophetic Zion and prophetic Jerusalem to be the United States. America, where true Israel has been regathered and blessed by God. So will we be able to recognize that which has taken our great nation captive by the reading of the Bible Scriptures of that thing called "Babylon," which was to take Zion captive.

And we propose to prove to you that that capturing power, called "Babylon" is the anti-Christ world power of which our Ministers speak so much about, and which is always way off in the future somewhere.

While telling all the Christians that they are going to be "Raptured" off into never never land where they will not see tribulation, where they will never be ruled by that power anyway, never realizing that they are seeing tribulation **NOW** at this very moment in time.

That our nation has been taken over completely by the so-called anti-Christ who is ruling our nation and the world from behind the scenes now; it has brought violent death to millions of Christians who were not "Raptured" and who is killing more all the time. And still our Ministers keep looking for the Rapture which will never come. They have been blinded by their own Baal Doctrines and cannot see nor hear the truth; their hearts have been hardened and Paul spoke in truth when he said, "For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them.

For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,

And changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.

And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them." [335]

That anti-Christ power is here; it is already in existence; it already rules the world and has brought violent death to at least two hundred million (200,000,000) in just this century alone. That "Red" anti-Christ power seized absolute control of Russia at the end of World War I. B Nikolai Lenin (1917-1924), Aleksei Rykov (1924-1930), Vyacheslav Molotov (1930-1941), Joseph Stalin (1941-1953; General Secretary of the Communist Party, 1924-1953), bGeorgi Malenkov (1953-1955), Nikolai Bulganin (1955-1958), Nikita Khrushchev (1958-1964), Leonid Brezhnev (1964-1982), Yuri Andropov (1982-1984), Konstantin Chernenko (1984-1985), and Mikhail Gorbachev the current visible ruler of Russia and their henchmen have killed twenty million (20,000,000) or almost fifteen percent of Russia's population within the first twenty years of their takeover.[336]

Since that time the Communists have killed another ten to thirty million more; not counting the millions killed in the conquest of their satellite nations. New information on China now indicates that the Red anti-Christ killers have killed in that country almost one hundred and seventy million Chinese since 1949, when the Communist to over control of that country.

Now we ask the question: What power is it that is over our government which causes us to send billions of dollars in military and economic aid these murderous butchers?

It now appears that we are going to begin sending aid to Vietnam and Cambodia, countries who are killing their own people at such a rate that the merchant ships of the world avoid the coasts of Southeast Asia so as

to avoid being swamped with the hundreds of thousands who are fleeing for their lives. The human tragedy of the Communist rule in the various countries of the world is almost beyond description and yet our government continues to send them aid whenever they request it. Even to the point of denying our own American/Israel people.

What is it that is bringing such tribulation upon the people of the world and yet be hidden from our so-called "Ministers" the Clergy of Organized Religion? What is it that rules the world so completely that even non Communist countries cooperate in every way with this mass execution of people who do not wish to live under the Communist rule? Can you not see? This could only be possible if the anti-Christ system, that our so-called "Ministers" tell us is to come at some future time, were, and now are, in absolute control of all the governments of the world at the present time!!! Many use the book of Revelation, especially the vision of the woman of chapter 17 riding upon the red beast, which the angel revealed to John in 17:18 as being, "that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth."

They also use the second chapter of Thessalonians where it speaks of Christ's return, and says in verses 3 and 4, "Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped."

This they say is the prophecy of one man who will be worshipped or obeyed by all the people of the earth as the god or supreme ruler of the entire planet. In verses 8 and 9 it says, "then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders."

These passages and a number of others make it quite plain that there will be a power which will rule over all the earth sometime before the return of Jesus. And that that power will be destroyed when Christ returns.

The controversy between so-called Ministers is not over whether the Bible prophesies of such a power, but as to whether that power will be in existence and the ruler of the earth WHILE the Christians are still upon it. Many insist the anti-Christ power will come into existence only after Christians have been raptured away into Heaven.

But some believe current and past history provides us with all the evidence necessary to prove that power is here NOW and that it does rule; and that it accounts for the great tribulations in which the earth is currently under going. As part of the more visible evidence of that power, one has only to point to the complete control, which is openly anti- Christ the Red Bolsheviks have over a large number of the nations of the world; their partial control on many others and their hidden control which they exert upon the rest of the nations of the world. And of course do not forget the more than 100,000,000 million victims of the Red Communists in just the past 75 years.

Notice is 2 Thessalonians it speaks of a time when that man of sin will be revealed. It does not say; "when that man of sin comes." Which imparts the implications that the man of sin is already here; will be ruling and then at some later date he will be revealed. And to whom is he to be revealed? The Saints? If the prophets of Baal who inhabit most of the pulpits of America today are correct the Saints will be already raptured out, and if they are gone who will care if that man of sin is revealed?

## **"Mystery Babylon the Great, Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth."**

Described in Revelation 17:18 as, "that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth." is just such an entity. A ruling power that is a mystery. In other words, a ruling power that is concealed from most of the people of the United States and the earth.

Many of us believe "**Mystery Babylon**" is that great anti-Christ power which the Clergy of Organized Religion expect in the future, but we believe that it is already on earth and very much alive and is already



controlling most of the nations of the world, including the great Zion Nation of America.

Now let us turn to Second Thessalonians to see if the Son of Perdition, like Mystery Babylon will be here on earth and be identifiable before the return of Jesus Christ. This chapter, or rather bits and pieces of this chapter is used by the Clergy of Organized Religion in their Rapture Theory, about how that the Christians are supposed to be snatched off the earth by Christ, at which time the world and all of the non-Christians will be left to a time of great tribulation. Under one man, called the anti-Christ, who will then rule the world. "Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,"

So Paul does begin this chapter by making reference to the return of Christ and to the gathering of the saints to Jesus which will take place at that time. With that we have no argument, for we believe that when Jesus comes, there will be the resurrection of the dead, which is meant here by the phrase "our gathering together unto him."

Paul then goes on, still beseeching them, "That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand." Paul is saying, in effect, "Don't let anyone fool you into thinking that the return of Jesus is at hand, at that time."

Paul was writing this about thirty years after the Resurrection and ascension of the Lord Jesus Christ, which was over 1900 years ago. He said, at that time, the return of Christ was not eminent, no matter what anyone else said.

Verse 3, "Let no man deceive you by any means: for (because) that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition." Then the next verses describe, "That man of sin."

However, before we continue on, let's recap just what Paul has said. We will say it in our own words and you see if this is not what he said, only in other words, "I beseech brethren, that ye be not fooled into believing

that the return of Jesus is near or eminent. Because, that day of Jesus' return, will not come until a certain thing takes place. And what is that certain thing, that must take place before Christ's return? Of course, that man of sin must be revealed or made known. Let no man deceive you by any means, that day shall not come except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition."

Do you understand? Do you realize that tens of thousands of Ministers in America, the Clergy of Organized Religion, have been trained in the Seminaries to teach to you, that this Man of Sin, will be revealed only after the Christians have been Raptured from off the earth? And yet right here in the very chapter they quote; at its beginning, it says quite plainly, that The Man of Sin will be Revealed Before Jesus' Return. One can argue as to what or who the man of sin is. Some insist, it is one man; others say, "No it is government system which is anti-Christian"; others say, "No it is something within a person, that is your own carnal spirit, referring to the phrase 'mystery of iniquity' in verse 7 of 2 Thessalonians Chapter Two."

And many of us have heard all those explanations and more, but regardless of what you believe the man of sin is; Verse 1 through 3 states specifically and plainly that he will be revealed Before Jesus' return.

There is another phrase in verse 3 that we probably should examine while we are here. That phrase is, "except there come a falling away first." The Greek word is "apostasia" or in English "Apostasy." [337]

We usually hear the phrase "Great Apostasy" from our Ministers who point to all those masses of people who don't belong to that Ministers particular congregation or denomination. And they say, "See, look at all those other people they don't believe as we do, therefore we must be in the 'Great Apostasy,' and Jesus must be coming soon. Some of us have heard this for years and in many cases the smaller the sect or denomination the more fervent the preaching, that the world is in a great falling away - the 'Great Apostasy.'"

Thus, Jesus may come tonight, or next week or some time soon. But they do not realize, or ignore, that the "Apostasy" involves the revelation of the "man of sin." Not just the return of Jesus. So regardless of how one interprets; What is the "Great Apostasy?" If so many not believing just as we do proves a "Great Apostasy," or whether so few attending any Christians Church proves a "Great Apostasy," or if the many divisions, in the Church, proves "Apostasy." What ever it is, It must be connected with the Revelation of The Man of Sin before The Return of Jesus Christ!

We have no argument with those who say there is a great falling away in Christendom. In fact part of the evidence that there is a great falling away from the truth, is the tremendous number of professing Christians who believe in the false doctrine of the pre-tribulation Rapture.

We believe that the entire so-called ecumenical movement, and the national and World Council of Churches, are themselves a great falling away from the truth of Jesus Christ.

The ecumenicalists are of all sects of Christianity joining with the sects of the other religions and treating them all as co-equal. God never treated the false religions of devils and demons as being equal with His Word. So Ecumenicalism by definition is a great falling away.

But our disagreement with those who teach that the return of Christ is eminent because there is a falling away, is that they forgot to add that with that falling away must come the revelation of the man of sin. And we must repeat again and again that this passage of scripture does not say anything about the "coming" of the man of sin, for the implication is that he is "already" there, but is hidden and must be exposed or revealed.

Then when he is revealed or made known to the people then and only then follows Jesus' return. Many teach that this man of sin of Second Thessalonians Two is just another title for "their" great anti-Christ. This one man they say will take rule over the earth after the Christians are all Raptured away.

After the Rapture Doctrine became common fifty to seventy five years ago many began to speculate as to who the anti-Christ was.

In the 1920's and 1930's they named Joseph Stalin or Benito Mussolini as the anti-Christ. Thousands of tracts and books were written and published about those two men. Then with the rise of Hitler others began to name him as the great anti-Christ. However, the death of Mussolini in 1945 ended their speculation on them, but they continued with Stalin.

Then Stalin died, so a few began to point their finger at Mao Zedong (translated into English and known as such to most Americans as Mao tse Tung) of China. But most, by that time, having learned their lessons with the deaths of Stalin, Mussolini and Hitler began to teach just anti-Christ. Thus eliminating the necessity of naming a man who might die before their false teachings were fulfilled; So they did not attempt any longer to identify him with any known world figure. That way they could still teach their "Fairy Tale" of false and damnable heresies and not be exposed for the liars and hypocrites they are, when their particular anti-Christ passed from the scene.

Oh, there are some today who still attempt to get ahead of the world and make their own personal identifications of the anti-Christ. Such as the story which has been circulating in the Christian World for several years now; that the anti-Christ has been born in Egypt and is just awaiting the proper time to come forth and reveal himself.

Boy what a bunch of bologna. This so they can later say, supposedly in Heaven I told you so! When that certain one is revealed as the anti-Christ. But they are all making the same error. The Bible teaches no such thing as one individual anti-Christ. John is the only writer of the New Testament who uses the term, in his Epistles, and he wrote them some 1900 years ago, and he said, "and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists—Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist (so anyone who denies that Jesus is the Christ is an anti-Christ), that denieth the Father and the Son." [338]

Then John says, "And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof

ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is in the world.[339]" [340]

Then John speaks once more concerning this spirit of anti-Christ when he said, "For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh.[341] This is a deceiver and an antichrist." [342]

Therefore, we can clearly see that when John gave the definition of an anti-Christ it was anyone who denies the Lord Jesus Christ and that He came to earth in a flesh body, and was the Son of God, dwelt among us.

That such a person or religion is, in fact, anti-Christ. Which should identify to Christians that there are millions of anti- Christs in the world. But upon close study it will be found that only one religion is truly anti-Christ by definition, and that religion is Judaism! No, the Anti-Christ is not just one individual man and possibly neither is the man of sin as spoken of in Second Thessalonians Two. The man of sin is a prophetic entity just as the woman in scarlet in Revelation seventeen, is not just one individual woman, but a prophetic entity, so is the man of sin.

Now let's read a few descriptive phrases of that man of sin. Then we will present you with some thoughts that might be quite different than you have ever considered before, about what the "man of sin" could be. And how this prophecy about him could be fulfilled and is perhaps being fulfilled right now at the present time. While most of the world, in fact, most of Christendom is ignorant of its fulfillment.

However, the people of Christendom, of course, will eventually be apprised of its fulfillment. They will have to be so that he can be revealed to them, so that the prophecy can be completely fulfilled. In verse 3 he is called the son of perdition. The word perdition is the Greek word "Apoleia" which means "destruction." [343] So in other words the "son of perdition" is the "son of destruction" or the cause of destruction.

In verse 4, "Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God."

This phrase "sitteth in the temple of God" has fooled many. Since all Bible Students and Ministers know that there is no stone Temple of God anymore as the Romans destroyed the one in Palestine in A.D. 70, some have tried to say, "this cannot come to pass until someone rebuilds a stone temple, to God in Jerusalem again."

Which in itself opens up all sorts of speculations about how the Jews will rebuild the old temple and then this great anti-Christ will come and sit in it; and take over the rulership of the world, and be worshipped while he is in that great new temple. But what is the Temple of God? What could truly be called the Temple of God by Paul, a Christian Israelite, writing to the Thessalonians. Well, every Israelite should know, but most do not. "Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile (which is the Greek word 'Phtheiro' from 'Phthio' which means 'to ruin' or 'destroy' [344]) the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which Temple ye are." [345] Then we find, "What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost." [346]

In Second Corinthians Six Paul is exhorting believers to separate themselves from unbelievers and from infidels as he writes, "And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the Temple of the living God." [347] Then he explains, "as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them." Paul is quoting God's statement to the Israelites through the prophets Moses, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel and others that God would dwell in Israel.

Today, we have so little preaching on the true identity of Israel that most do not realize that God does really "dwell in Israel." Most Christians realize they cannot say in truth that God dwells in Palestine, or among the people called Jews because the Jews reject Jesus.

And to say that God dwells among them would fly in the face of New Testament teachings. So most Ministers ignore the multitude of promises and prophecies made by God to Israel, That He would always be the God of Israel and that He would dwell in and among them.

They do see that God is in Christendom but they do not relate that to the truth; that these Anglo-Saxons, Germanic, Scandinavian, Celtic and Kindred Christians: Are Israelites. In Ephesians, speaking of the whole congregation of believers collectively as the household of God. Paul says, "In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an Holy Temple in the Lord: In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit." [348]

So the Temple of God is in a partial sense each individual believer. In a collective sense, the whole household of Christian Israel. With this in mind we then ask: Where would the man of sin sit; Where he would masquerade as God and be worshipped, as God, in the Temple of God? It is obvious, that he would sit in the hearts and minds of a deluded and deceived Israel People, who think they are worshiping the Divine One, when in reality, they are worshiping an entity called in Second Thessalonians Two "that man of sin--the son of perdition."

The man of sin could be, and you think carefully about it and see if it makes sense to you. The man of sin could be a false Christ. Remember that Jesus warned in Matthew Twenty Four when the disciples asked about the signs of the end of the world (age). Jesus said that many would come in His name, or in the name of Jesus Christ and would deceive many.

He also gave as another sign in verse 24, "that there shall arise false Christs." This character in Second Thessalonians Two is called the man of sin. The word sin means the transgression of the law, according to 1 John 3:4. So the man of sin is therefore, a man of transgression of the law.

If a person, professing to worship Christ claims that "his" christ has put away God's Law and that there is no need for him to obey the Law, then he is believing in and worship-ping a christ of sin. A christ of transgression of the Law, or a "man of sin." Consider it another way. If a person believes

that "his" christ is going to come and snatch him off the earth and take him to heaven, and then turn the earth over to the wicked; And if that is false doctrine, a lie, and it can be easily proven so, then that person believes in and worships a Jesus who is not the real Jesus of the Bible.

He is worshipping a false christ, one who has attributes which the true Jesus does not have. And one who is to do things which the real Jesus of the Bible will not do. He is, in deed, and, in fact, worshipping a "man of sin." And that man of sin, that false god is in that person, in the Temple of God and is being worshipped as God.

To fulfill Second Thessalonians Two there is no need to for any one person or any false god to go into a Stone Temple over in Old Palestine. Second Thessalonians Two can be fulfill by the simple fact that thousands or millions of God's people worship as God, someone who is not the real Jesus. Paul gave in 1 Corinthians 10:12 a warning to Christian Israelites, "Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall."

We implore you, today, to examine your Christ. Is He the one of the Bible, or is He a false Christ? Put into your mind by false prophets teaching false doctrines. Are you worshipping the true Jesus of the Bible or are you worshipping the man of sin? Thus, as many of you know, Babylon is a false religion.

And if any part of our people are captive of, or under a false religion, a false Christ, then they are captive of Babylon are they not? But repeating again, our major interest in spending this time on Second Thessalonians Two, was to prove to you that whatever, or whoever the man of sin is he must be revealed. He must be exposed, he must be made known to God's people before Christ's return.

Now let us return to exposing what it is which has captivated our people; religiously, economically, politically, socially and in all phases of our national life. It is called in the Bible "Babylon." And it is described so that we can see it and understand it.

In Micah God said Zion or end time Israel, in her new land, would be held captive under Babylon. Then in Revelation 15 and 16, we saw that



Babylon was to be divided into three parts. And we believe, that great city, which reigneth over the kings (governments) of the earth is something which rules the rulers of the earth; obviously from behind the scenes, but is the ruler nevertheless.

And it is obvious, that for this prophetic Babylon to capture prophetic Zion; Prophetic Zion must of necessity be on the earth, not in some faraway Heaven. For we absolutely refuse to credit some earthly power with being strong enough to threaten the Heavenly abode of Almighty God Himself.

Therefore, The Zion of Prophecy is a place here on the earth. And we have previously identified that prophetic Zion as Christian America. When the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates, in Revelation 16:12, it was followed by the three unclean spirits (three parts of Babylon) in verse 13. Which went forth in verse 14; "unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty." In verse 16 the place of their gathering was a place "called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon." Then as John saw the gathering of the kings of the earth, but before the battle, in verse 17, he saw as "the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air." and followed in verse 18 by "voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great."

Then finally "great Babylon" is mentioned. For the first time in this long passage and only the second time in the Book of Revelation. Its previous mention was in Chapter 14:8.

Here in Revelation 16:19 it says: "And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath." This implies destruction in part and perhaps in its entirety, but in any case God's wrath is shown here to be directed against "great Babylon."

It would appear obvious that this "Babylon" is currently in existence on the earth now and we believe the earthquake which divided Babylon into three parts has already taken place. That it is past history and that it was not a physical quake of the planet earth as some teach.

In Revelation 17:18 the angel told John Babylon the great is "that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth."

And to put it another way, great Babylon is the Ruler of the Rulers. And just before it is destroyed it will be divided into three parts. Which we have already described as being (1) Russia and its control in Asia, Eastern Europe and parts of Africa. (2) China and its sphere of control in Asia, including India, Southeast Asia and parts of Africa. (3) The Western Hemisphere and Western Europe with the rulers of the United States being the dominating force in those areas.

However, the co-operation of these super powers is still mostly hidden from the view of the people of the world. But millions of Americans are beginning to suspect that the great words of criticisms and anger, which pass publicly between three governments, and which is so prominently displayed in the news media are really all part of a staged show for the people's consumption.

Many now suspect that the rulers of America only pretend enmity towards the rulers of Russia and China. And that the rulers of Russia only pretend enmity towards the rulers of China and the United States. For they are beginning to realize that there is no major activity by any of the three governments which are in anyway damaging to the rulers of the other two governments.

Although thousands, yes even millions of people die in so-called wars between these super-powers, such as Korea, Southeast Asia and now in several wars in Africa and South America. The ruling powers of these three major governments remain intact and grows ever stronger, but never weaker.

Think about it, although some seem to be at cross purposes with others and even carry on so-called wars with each other in which their own people are killed the men who make up those ruling governments remain untouched. During Korea have you never wondered why, if America wanted to defeat the enemy, would it allow one of its greatest Generals to be sent home just because he was in the process of defeating the enemy? General Douglas MacArthur was not under the control of the American President while he served in Korea.

He was under the control of the United Nations. And it was they who fired him and not President Harry S. Truman. He was fired because he broke the back of the North Korean Army when he launched the Inchon Harbor invasion. And he could have destroyed the invading Chinese Army with just one atomic bomb.

Oh one could say well we could not use the bomb because our men were too close to the blast area. Well tests were even then taking place in New Mexico with American troops much closer to the blast area than they would have been in Korea. The bomb would have saved thousands of American and other national soldiers, putting the Communist expansion plans back a hundred years and maybe more. Perhaps even destroying it one and for all.

Who was so powerful that they could control our military to such an extent that they could actually cost America thousands of its best men in a no-win military action? Who kept our navy and air force from destroying the enemies war making potential and food supplies?

That the United Nations rules over the United States would be obvious to the American people if they would only think about what has been told them by men in government. Even the various Presidents such as Truman and etc. President Truman in 1951 after he announced the war in Korea and moved our American troops there, announced to the people of the United States that the United States was fighting a war (police action) under the orders of the United Nations.

When General MacArthur, and other military leaders and several Congressmen called upon the President to carry the war into North Korea and defeat them and end the war.

President Truman informed them and the people of America he could not do such a thing because he had to obey the mandates of the United Nations. That this was a "United Nations Police Action." In other words the President of the United States was admitting that he had a ruler above him. A ruler that he was required to obey. And he admitted it, although most Americans did not understand nor realize just what he was admitting to.

Twelve years later when President Johnson ordered several hundred thousand American teenagers to be shipped to South Vietnam, to begin a war there, he stated publicly that we, American troops, were going to South Vietnam to carry out the terms of the SETO Treaty. The full name of which was the Southeast Treaty Organization, a branch of the United Nations.

The American military was ordered to fight, to kill and be killed, but never to win under orders from the United Nations. Two hundred and fifty thousand American men were killed or maimed for life in Southeast Asia during that insane United Nations Controlled war.

Who gave the orders that prevented them from winning, and in many cases, from even defending themselves unless they were fired upon by the enemy. Well most Americans believe that it was President Johnson and later President Nixon, but what was the original source of the orders - The United Nations - something that rules, quietly from behind the scenes, almost all of the nations of the world, in including our own.

Recently Americans were surprised to see their own government, or at least what they believed to be their own government, transfer American Territory, the Panama Canal Zone, to a Communist dominated foreign government; Panama. What they did not realize that the U.S. had not controlled the Panama Canal for many years. For if America had really controlled it during the Korean and the Vietnam Wars, would it have made sense that the American Government would have allowed cargo and war

ships of their enemies to pass through it. Yet, that is exactly what happened.

Russian, English, French and others ships regularly passed through it carrying war supplies to the North Vietnamese Army to kill our American Men, during the Vietnam War. Not only that, the United States Government was ordered by the United Nations not to blockade the only sea port in North Vietnam, that being Haiphong. And the U.S. rulers obeyed those orders!

Scores of American Battleships and several Aircraft carriers sat out in the China Sea off Vietnam for eight long years during the war, prohibited by United Nations orders from firing a shot or interfering with Any ship bringing food and war materials to North Vietnam.

Oh, they made a pretence of mining the harbour, but were soon forced to remove the mines by other orders from the United Nations. Several multi-national gas and oil companies sold gas, diesel and other fuel along with munitions to both North Vietnam and the United States and delivered their products in time of war without interference from either side!

During the Vietnam war literally thousands of American ships docked in Saigon and at Da Nang, and at any one time from a dozen to a score of them would be in the harbours. Although the Viet Cong guerillas had 120 MM Russian rockets, which they launched with regularity into the residential areas of Saigon and Da Nang, from the Mekong Delta; not once did those rockets strike any of the ships docked in the harbors of Saigon or Da Nang.

Not once did any of those rockets strike the hundreds of warehouses that were used to house the war supplies. Not once did those rockets strike any of the United States or South Vietnam Government buildings in Saigon, nor did they strike any of the Oil storage depots. Those Russian made Vietnamese rockets killed only American soldiers and South Vietnamese civilians. But the supplies to carry on the war had safe passage and safe storage afforded by both sides.

Who was it that commanded the Viet Cong not to hit the ships in the Saigon or Da Nang harbours or docks, or any of the government buildings, nor any of the oil and gasoline storage depots? Was it the same ones who ordered the American forces to not strike the North Vietnamese harbour, docks, government buildings, nor any of the gasoline storage depots, nor any of the ships that were bringing war supplies to the enemy?

Who was it that commanded the American Air Force not to use the carpet and systematic bombing which proved so successful during World War II against the Germans? Who was it that commanded the American Air Force not to bomb the dams in the northern part of North Vietnam which would have destroyed completely the food supply for the Vietnamese Army and the North Vietnamese people, thus making it impossible for them to carry on the war, which would have saved countless American lives? Who was it that ordered the American Air Force to bomb the jungles and mountain sides which inflicted minimal casualties upon the enemy?

In ten years of warfare only ONE U.S. Government building was damaged, and that was during the Tiet Offensive, and by only 10 Viet Cong who were quickly rounded up and killed. Thousands of United States Government officials walked the streets of Saigon for ten years almost at will and the Viet Cong guerrillas left them strictly alone. During that same time the Viet Cong killed tens of thousands of American Troops. And this, almost unbelievable condition continued for almost ten years. Yet the mental condition of the American people, is such, even today, most of them do not realize that such a condition could exist only if the rulers of both sides had a prior agreement as to who or what could, and who or what could not be destroyed before the conflict was even begun.

Who was it that commanded to kill only U.S. soldiers and not U.S. Government officials? Was it the same power which prevented the American Air Force from bombing North Vietnam? Was it the same power which, even today, prevents America from protecting itself from the holocaust of a future war.

The news media which reflected the dead and wounded on our television screens every night, and pictures on the front page of our newspapers

every day, of almost ten years of that war have very little time, if any, to depict or report upon the terrible butchery which the liberals of America caused to be inflicted upon the people of South Vietnam, Cambodia and Laos. They never, but never, showed pictures of people killed by the Communist butchers, but they wring their hands and cry out to high heaven whenever a Communist or some other enemy of America is killed, and depict it has a heinous crime against humanity, if an American happens to come out on top of a conflict with them.

It has been reported that almost 500,000 million Africans have been killed by the Communists and Cuban troops in Africa, and a picture of the deaths of these who have been murdered by them is almost never shown on an American Television, magazine or newspaper. But if an American or White South African happens to kill a Communist in defense of his life, family or property, it is in every newspaper, magazine and on every television set in America.

Russia, Cuba and China operate at will in Africa and what is the United Nations doing about it. Well a spokesman for the United Nations announced that they would impose an oil embargo upon South Africa, but not one single peep about any sanctions or embargoes upon Russia, Cuba or China. The United Nations in its some 47 years of existence has yet to inflict a single incident or action that has resulted in a detrimental action against the rulers of the Communist Nations.

Oh, there have been literally millions of people killed in so-called anti-Communist conflicts, but there has been nothing that has happened that would interfere with the actions of the rulers of the Communist Nations at all. But, in fact, its every action has been against every country or government in the world that would not bow its knees before the great god of the Communists/Zionist/Jewish one-worlders; The United Nations.

It is even know working day and night against the only nation left in the world who opposes its domination of the world and its countries, that country is South Africa. And American foreign policy is being directed toward that same end. To the overthrow of White South Africa, while ignoring and openly aiding Russia and China in their assault of the other

nations of Africa. The three parts of Mystery Babylon are operating in concert, and the cities of nations are falling, just as the verse said. And the islands and the mountains (nations) are disappearing.

Is it possible; that there is more to the United Nations than we have been led to believe? But instead is a visible part of an otherwise invisible world-government, which already controls almost every country and ruler on the earth.

Is it possible; that if we could we see the rest of the this control force and mechanism, we could then read the rest of Revelation 17 and 18 and say: "Eureka, I have found it, I have found Mystery Babylon the mother of harlots and the abominations of the earth."

Is it possible; that pro United Nations propaganda and church doctrine, such as the Rapture theory and the future anti-Christ, are really falsehoods of Babylon designed to cover-up the truth of an existence of anti-Christ world government already exists. And to keep her hidden from those she has captured already and those she is about to capture. In the second chapter of Zechariah the prophet tells of seeing an Angel with a measuring line, who said that he was measuring Jerusalem.

In Revelation 21, where John saw a vision of what he called the New Jerusalem, said in verse 15, "And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city."

Other similarities in the two visions that one can see that both men were writing of the same Jerusalem; New Jerusalem, Prophetic Jerusalem, and not the old historical city. That New Jerusalem was a land, a great nation, to be inhabited by the regathered tribes of Israel, is made plain in such verses Zechariah 2:4, where we read, "Jerusalem shall be inhabited as towns without walls for the multitude of men and cattle therein."

In the first chapter God says in verse 14, "I am jealous for Jerusalem and for Zion with a great jealousy." Then in verse 17, "My cities through prosperity shall yet be spread abroad."



In chapter two verse 6, God said of this Jerusalem; "I have spread you abroad as the four winds of the heaven." This was fulfilled in the driving out of the Israel people from Old Canaan Land several hundred years before Christ and their dispersion into the then vacant continent of Europe where they were to become the great nations of Christendom. When they were scatter over Europe they lost their name of Israel and later became known generally to historians as Isaac's Sons or Saxons. With divisions such as Angles, Celts, Germans, Scandinavians and other kindred people.

As you read the foregoing and the following exposé you will come to understand that we believe that the Israel people have been regathered right here in the United States and that America is the city and the nation called by the name of New Jerusalem and by the name of Zion in prophecy. Of course many of our Israel people still live in England, the Western Nations of Europe, Australia, New Zealand, South Africa and Canada. That they have been here off and on for thousands of years in response to God's Word in 2 Samuel 7:10, and 1 Chronicles 17:9.

In Zechariah two God speaks to this New Jerusalem, "Deliver thyself, O Zion, that dwellest with the daughter of Babylon." And in Micah four, verse 10 God said to Zion, "thou shalt go even to Babylon; there shalt thou be delivered; there the Lord shall redeem thee from the hand of thine enemies." These and many others make it plain prophetic Zion would be captured by prophetic Babylon. Now lets go on in the Book of Revelation and see if we can recognize Mystery Babylon the Great from the descriptions as shown in chapter 16, 17 and 18. We finished through verse 20 of Revelation 16 where Babylon was divided into three parts and the cities and the governments were falling. And every Island fled away and the mountains were not found; This is symbolic language for countries and nations.

They are disappearing as independent states and are being absorbed or swallowed up into one or the other of the three parts of Babylon; One part of Babylon represented by Russia, which rules Western Asia and Eastern Europe is at this moment waging war against several parts of Africa at this very moment; Whether the American people are aware of it or not.

Meanwhile Red China, a second part of Babylon is solidifying its control upon the sub-continent of Asia. With Hong Kong soon to become part of China again as England has agreed to give up its control of it in the very near future. The third part of Babylon, the Western European Nations, including the United States is co-operating completely with those conquests.

Verse 21 is a strange one, "And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great." This vision that John saw is often taught as if it will be real hail; frozen water which will fall from heaven. But remember, although John may have seen hail stones in the vision, like the other parts of his visions, each of these things was representative of something else.

The previous verses about the islands fleeing and the mountains not being found, certainly is not going to be fulfill by real islands getting up out of the water and running away on supernatural legs. Nor by the disappearance of all the mountains on the earth. No, islands and mountains in prophecy stands for small and larger nations. And water in the Bible represents the Word of God, or the living water which would come from Christ. In Ephesians 5 Paul writes of Christs love for the Church in verses 25 and 26, "Husbands love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word."

Gods' Word washes and cleanses people, but in Revelation 16:21 that water is frozen; it is in the form of hail; it cannot wash, it cannot cleanse, it can only cause hurt and cause immense pain. And many of the doctrines and teachings of Organized Religion today is like frozen water. Although they quote God's Word and present it as God's Word, they are handled deceitfully and in error; it cannot be drunk, it cannot be absorbed and it is in a form which brings about blasphemy against God.

Now it says that these hail stones fell upon men from heaven, which would indicate that God was the source of them, and it is true that Almighty God will send false doctrines to men who will not accept His Truths.

Second Thessalonians 2:10-11 reads, "because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie."

And it is obvious to any that will only open their eyes and see that many are being sent strong delusions; for many do believe lies and many do blaspheme God. So the hail of Revelation 16:21 would be, in effect, God's Word being rained upon wicked men in such a way that they will not believe it nor understand it; But instead blaspheme God.

To show that this is true, we have an example in Matthew 13 where Jesus told His disciples that He taught in parables so that **Some** people would not understand Him. Now, there is one remedy for the frozen Word: Get away from Ministers who freeze or hide God's Word by mis-teaching it. God's Ministers are to make the Word plain and teach it in truth. Paul said in Hebrews that God's Ministers are to be made, "a flame of fire," [349] and Fire will unfreeze God's Word.

Let's go on into the next chapter, Chapter 17 of Revelation. Please remember that these chapter divisions were not in the original text. The text was first divided into chapters and verses when the Geneva Bible was translated in the fifteen hundreds and it was done so for ease of reference.

So Revelation 17 is a continuation of Revelation 15 and 16. The vision of the seven angels with the seven golden vials of God's wrath to be poured out upon the earth. After John saw the hail, we read in Revelation 17:1, "And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters."

The angel is now going to show John the judgment, or the punishment, or the end of the great whore. Called in verse 5 "MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT." Remember, Babylon the great whore is already here when these things are going on. John does not see Babylon arriving upon the scene.

In fact, if you will check quite closely you will find that the Book of Revelation does not announce the arrival or the rise of Babylon at all. Only what she is doing and her end. So she is not something that arises on the scene during the seven last plagues she is already there when the scene begins. The angel said to John, "Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns."

Here again is being demonstrated the utter impossibility of these visions being fulfilled literally. We will not be looking for some woman, dressed in red, riding upon a red beast having seven heads. No, this is symbolic for something else.

"And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, **Mystery, Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth.**" [350]

And now we wish you to listen, and read very very carefully to the next verse. Especially those of you who have been taught that Christians will not be on the earth when these last chapters of the Book of Revelation are being fulfilled. Verse 6 of Revelation 17, still speaking of the woman arrayed in purple and scarlet - **Mystery Babylon the Great**, "And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration."

Now that last word there does not mean that John looked upon her with favour, as the original Greek word means to look closely or to be in awe. And we can imagine that if we had seen such a vision that we would have looked upon it in awe also. But the woman was drunk with what? With the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus.

Whatever this woman in scarlet is She is a Killer of Christians! That is obvious because she is drunken with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. This woman arrayed in purple and scarlet to be judged here, during the time of the seventh vial or the last plague upon the earth, was seen by John to have killed so many Christians he could describe here in no other way than to say that she was drunken with their blood.

In verse 18 the angel told John, "And the woman which thou sawest is that great city which reigneth over the kings of the earth."

So we can see clearly that she is the world ruling power. She kills Christians and in the last verse of Revelation 18, after she is destroyed, God says; "And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth."

Now we have said several times that this world ruling power called Babylon is here on the earth today. It is not some future thing! She is already working her awesome murders upon the Christian people in most of the nations of the earth. And she is guilty of the death of not only Christians but of the death of all that has been slain upon the earth. That God's people would be in Babylon, captured by her as it were, is obvious by the call of God to his people in Revelation 18:4, "Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues." Which produces the following question: Why would God be so foolish as to call for His people to come out of Babylon, in Revelation 18, if the ministers, the Clergy of Organized Religion are correct in their Rapture Doctrine, when they say all the Christians will be gone when these passages are fulfilled? No, God's people have not only been captured by Babylon, as we read in Micah 4:10, but Babylon is responsible for the death of many of them.

Let's recount a little history, actually recent history, which has occurred in the lifetime of the older people, and at least partiality known to all. The Red Bolsheviks conquered the 16 territories of Russia and Siberia between 1917 and 1921. By 1931 they had put to death at least twenty million

(20,000,000) people, most of whom were Christians, and at least that many more were in slave camps.

Every Christian Bible, to their knowledge, in Russia was burned or destroyed; every Christian Church was closed; every Christian Minister was either killed or placed in the slave labour camps in Siberia.

And that process has been repeated in every nation taken over by the Communist, although it has not been reported upon by the Jew owned news media in America. The same people who claim their colour is red, just the colour of the woman and the beast in Revelation 17 and 18.

The Christians in Russia were not Raptured; the Christians of Armenia, Azerbidjhan, Byelorussia, Georgia, Kazakh, Kirghy, Ukraine, Uzbe, Turkmen, Estonia, Latvia, Lithunia and none of the subsequent nations taken over by the Communist were Raptured; the Christians of China were not Raptured, nor were the some ten million (10,000,000) Protestant Christians murdered by the Roman Catholic Church before and after the inquisition were not Raptured.

It has been admitted by at least one of the Clergy of Organized Religion that most of the Christians of China have been murdered. The Christians of Cuba were not Raptured, however, some of them did escape in small boats before Castro's power become complete.

During the Vietnam War another war was began and ended in Africa with little if any American news coverage. The war against the Ible Tribe by the Nigerians. Britain, Russia and the Jewish Israelis armed eighty thousand (80,000) Nigerian troops and in two years they had killed or starved to death one million (1,000,000) of the six million Ible people. Our rulers and our news media remained silent as did most of the radio and television preachers.

When it was almost over, Newsweek Magazine ran a one page article on it, casually commenting upon the one million who had died, and saying that the Ibles were the **Only** Negro tribe in Africa who had adopted Christianity as the official religion of the tribe.

Just think of it, one million Negro professing Christians slaughtered by arms from a combination of Britain, Russia and Israel and most Americans never even heard of it! At the end of the Vietnam War when the red butchers of North Vietnam swept in upon the helpless people of South Vietnam and Cambodia refugees who escaped later told of the systematic murder of every individual who was a Christian and everyone who, to their knowledge, had been friendly to a Christian or Christian Missionaries.

In the first weeks, after the Communist takeover, red murder squads went into every Christian orphanage in South Vietnam and shot to death every baby there, to eliminate what they called contamination. As you know, thousands of South Vietnamese did escape by themselves, or with the Americans in those last desperate days of the collapse of South Vietnam.

In America many Ministers did join together in a relief effort to provide food and clothes for the refugees. In many cases they even helped bring them to America and settle them here. Strangely enough, or perhaps not so strangely even while some were helping Christian refugees from the Communist slaughter, others went right on preaching about how American Christians would never suffer such things, but would be Raptured off the earth before any tribulation came. As Jesus said in Matthew 6:23, about such men; "If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!"

Being blinded by their own false doctrine, they could not see the tribulation being enacted right before their eyes. And still the slaughter and the horror in Southeast Asia goes on without abatement, without comment by the American news media, the American Government or the American Clergy of Organized Religion.

Lord Elton, British Tory spokesman for foreign affairs, stated in the English Parliament; "Of all the regimes which the fugitives left behind the most ferocious is in Cambodia. In 1975 the country had seven million (7,000,000) inhabitants and since the Khmer Rouge took over more than one and one-half million (1,500,000) have died of execution or starvation."

He further said; "The policy is the destruction of all ties with the past and with the outside world except China."

Vietnam has since found out the same thing. The so-called Communist conquest was in actuality a conquest of Red China, one of the parts of Mystery Babylon. Who is ruling America? Is it the people of America? Or has the United States, unknown by its citizens, been captured by that thing known in the Bible as Mystery Babylon?

Since 1918 the Red anti-Christ have almost swept parts of Asia and Eastern Europe clean of Christians. They are now working to either kill or drive out all of the Christians in Africa. Aided in their criminal pursuits by the rulers of our own beloved America.

And still the teaching of the Rapture grows and spreads. It is almost unbelievable to those of us who study God's Word and recognize from it the present tribulation which the blind cannot see.

But think God, as we read Revelation 17 and 18 we are not reading of the rise of this great anti-Christ world power, we are reading of its judgment or its end, its total destruction.

And as Babylon become visible to our people, they will be seeing its termination, its final death throes. As God moves to bring it to judgment and destruction. In fact, all of the Bible teaches it will be the wicked which will be removed from the earth, not the Christians or the Saints. The so-called Rapture Doctrine, like all false doctrines has the truth turned upside down and backwards.

**Question: Identity Preachers Say There Is No Burning Hell, and yet I Read in Revelation 20:15 about Sinners Being Cast into the Lake of Fire. How Do You Explain That?**

**A n s w e r :**  
this    verse



First of all,  
says nothing



about men being tortured in that "fire."

It does not even tell us that those sinners will be immortal and will remain alive while that "fire" tortures them for eternity. If the fire were literal, then the most we could say is that the sinners would be burned up and destroyed. The problem usually arises when we fail to read Daniel 7 along with Revelation 20. Daniel 7:9-10 speaks of the great judgment:

"—His throne was like the fiery flame; and his wheels as burning fire. A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him; thousands thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him; the judgment was set, and the books were opened."

Daniel pictures the "lake of fire" as issuing from God and His throne. The throne is a universal symbol of Law. A king sitting upon a throne pictures that king ruling by Law and judging the people by means of Law. Thus, the fiery throne of Daniel 7:9 is actually the fiery Law of God by which God judges all men. Deuteronomy 33:2 speaks of God's Law as a "fiery Law," and Jeremiah 23:9 says, "Is not my word like as a fire?"

So it all boils down to one thin: If you want to learn the nature of the "lake of fire," you must learn the basic principles of God's Law by which God judges all sin. Does God's Law demand torture for sin? No, for Paul tells us that "the wages of sin is death." (Note: it does Not say "spiritual death.")

It is a basic principle of Bible Law that justice is never satisfied until full restitution has been paid to all the victims of injustice. Our modern minds have been conditioned by tradition to believe that justice is when the criminal has been properly tortured on the rack or behind bars, but these penalties for sin are not found in God's Law. Rather, God's Law demands restitution, because the purpose and goal of God's judgments are:

- (1) To repay all victims of injustice; and
- (2) To correct and rehabilitate the sinner. God's judgments are much like a parent disciplining a child in this way. God's fiery judgment is corrective in nature, as Isaiah 26:9 says:

"When thy judgments are in the earth, the inhabitants of the world will learn righteousness."

The lake of fire is described in Revelation 21:8 as "the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone." The Greek word translated "brimstone" actually means sulphur, but the word has a double meaning. The original Greek word is "*theo*," was considered to be sacred to the ancient Greeks. It was used to purify and cleanse.

Thus, in its verb form the word means "to hallow, make divine, or to dedicate to God." Thus, the lake of fire and brimstone is a lake of divine purification or consecration to God. its purpose will be to correct and purify the sinner, not simply to torture him or even annihilate him.

Those who are cast into this lake of fire will be forced to pay restitution for all the sins they committed, since they did not place their faith in the righteousness of Christ and receive forgiveness of sins.

We may not know how God is going to judge each sin, but God has given us His righteous and just Law that we may know the basic principles of true justice. Let us not be swayed by the "justice" of the world, with its imprisonment and torture.

### **Question: If the Bible Says These Things Are Going to Happen, What Can We Actually Do about It?**

**Answer:** It is true that God has foreordained all things according to the counsel of His own will.[351] However, we must be careful not to be fatalists, who will sit back and do nothing.

God has revealed to us His plans, in order that we will have a part in the outworking of those plans. And, yes, He has revealed to us in His Word that our nation would fall into sin, both personally and nationally. But we are not working against the plan of God by witnessing. We are called to

be witnesses, so that they will be without an excuse if they refuse to obey God, having seen the truth.[352]

The Old Testament prophets preached repentance, even though they knew about and had prophesied the destruction and captivity of Israel. Can you imagine them saying, "Well, these things are going to happen, so what can we do about it?" No, they preached repentance because God said so.

However, we have a greater hope than did the Old Testament prophets. Whereas they knew that Israel was to be cast out of the old land, our message is that of deliverance. We tell people that we are already in captivity, but that a day is coming in which the God of Israel will deliver us. This deliverance will come immediately after we repent and turn to His Law in obedience and humility. There is actually nothing that we can do to make people repent. But we are called to witness until God turns the hearts of His people.

**Question: How Does One Become an Identity Minister?  
Does One Have to Go to the Run of the Mill Schools and  
Then Adopt the Identity Teaching?**

**Answer:** Keep in mind that there is no such denomination as "Identity." There is only an Identity Movement. There are no Identity Bible Colleges or seminaries that we know of. As Christians, we are all ordained of God to teach our people the Word of God and preach repentance and the Kingdom of God. However, each Christian has been given a different "measure of the gift." [353] God has given apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers to perfect (make mature) the saints for the work of the ministry.[354] In other words, these special gifts, callings or offices are God's gift to Christians, so that they would teach them how to perform the work of the ministry. These special offices should be filled very carefully, however. We are to "lay hands suddenly on no man." [355] He should be a novice,[356] and he should have a good reputation. "And let these also first be proved (tested); then let them use (serve) the office of a deacon (minister, servant, elder), being found blameless." [357] Before we ordain anyone to such an office, we must see evidence of God's calling

(ordination), and we must know the man or have someone we trust (an Identity minister) vouch for his character.

### **Question: What Does Christ or the Bible Say about Personally Protecting Ourselves in Self-defence?**

**Answer:** The entire Spirit of the Law of God promotes the idea of self-defence.

In fact, that is the primary purpose of government. The judgments of the Law were given for our defence against criminals. Jesus' disciples needed no weapons while Jesus was with them. But at the close of His ministry, Jesus instructed them: "When I send you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said No, nothing.

Then said He unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it and likewise his script; and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment and buy one. For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in Me, And He was reckoned among the transgressors; for the things concerning Me have an end.

And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And He said unto them, it is enough." [358] In other words, because the people (government) had rejected Christ's Kingdom, they numbered Christ among the transgressors (accused Him of being a criminal, and later the disciples were accused as well).

The principle is clear. As long as you are safe, you don't need a weapon. But when you see danger approaching, sell your clothing if need be, and buy a weapon. But don't go overboard. Remember, two swords were enough for 12 disciples, for God was with them.

### **Question: Why Have the Indians of North America Been so Persecuted, Robbed, and Killed off, and Why Has the U.S. Government from George Washington to the Present Day Kept Breaking Promises and Treaties?**

**Answer:** We imagine the old Canaanites from Joshua to David asked the same questions.

Our nation has indeed broken treaties, and God is judging us for that sin. However, the Indians were also known to break treaties as fast as they made them, too. We must first recognize that God gave us this land, just as God gave Canaan to our ancestors. Secondly, the killing of the Indians did not really begin until the Indians had killed many thousands of white settlers.

Most Indian casualties were the result of the white man defending himself and his family from massacre and often torture. Thirdly, under Indian common law it was understood that land claims were only valid while the immediate territory was occupied. It was understood that when a village or individual moved on, they had just one year to come back. After one year, the land was free for anyone to claim and settle.

Thus, the white settlers had legal claim to almost all of the land they settled, even by Indian Common Law. North America was so sparsely populated by Indians that hardly 1% of it was every legally claimed by Indians at any one time.

For the first 200 years or so, the Indians did not generally fight the white man over the ownership of land. They fought for plunder and for glory in battle that would distinguish them as being "great warriors" among their people. They certainly got what they fought for, and so "verily, they have their reward." It was not until the late 1700's that the white man finally began to learn how to fight "Indian style" (i.e., ambush villages and massacre everyone; men, women, and children.

Today we call it "genocide.") But whereas the whites did this only occasionally, genocide was standard policy for many Indian tribes. And mind you, the motivation was almost always purely for plunder and personal glory. So it was the white settlers who were persecuted, robbed, and killed off by the Indians, not the other way around. If it had not been for their greater population, the white settlers soon would have disappeared.

## **Question: What or Who Are the 144,000 in Revelation 7?**

**Answer:** Revelation 7 tells us that the 144,000 are Israelites, or 12,000 from each tribe.

The breakdown of the 144,000 into tribal units makes it abundantly clear that God is not speaking of "spiritual Israelites," but of the race of Israel that had been scattered 800 years earlier. 144,000 is not necessarily a literal number. We believe it is the symbolic number for completion and perfection.

Therefore, it would stand for all the Israelites of those tribes. Some, however, argue that 12 is the number of governmental completion and perfection, and that therefore, this refers to the "overcomers" among the Israelites who will reign with Christ in the Kingdom. (The rest would be citizens, but not a part of the governmental body).

This view is generally accompanied by the additional explanation that not all of these 144,000 would be alive at the same time, but they would be resurrected at the same time. Thus, the selection and sealing of the 144,000 would be spread out over the whole history of Adam to the completed Kingdom. On the other hand, Adam, Methuselah, and Abraham were not a part of the 12 tribes sealed, so this could present a problem to this particular viewpoint.

God, of course, can do as He wishes, but we would be careful about limiting God's bureaucracy to 144,000. such limitations tend to make people compete with each other to be of that number. If they feel as though they had "attained," they could easily become quite self-righteous.

## **Question: What Is the Meaning of Romans 6:14?**

**Answer:** The above verse says, "For sin shall not have dominion over you, for you are not under the law, but under grace."

The key to understanding this passage is in understanding the phrase "under the law." In the Biblical system of justice, if I should be found

guilty of stealing \$1,000, the law would sentence me to repay you as restitution either \$2,000 or \$4,000, depending upon the circumstances.[359] But if I have no money or property with which to pay restitution, then I must be "sold for my theft" (vs. 3). In other words, I must work off my debt until it is paid.

Sin is reckoned as a debt to be paid to the victims of injustice. Thus, in legal terminology, one who is sold for his theft is "under the law" for as long as it takes him to pay his debt. Once that debt is paid, then the law releases him from the dominion of his sin (in this case, theft). He is, in effect, placed "under grace."

In Romans, Paul speaks of our justification before the Law by faith in the finished work of Christ. "All have sinned." Paul says in Romans 3:23, and thus the entire world stands convicted of sin by the Law.[360] In ourselves we are all guilty and "under the law." However, Christ paid the full penalty of sin (debt) for us. Those who place their faith in His free gift in payment of the restitution owed are "under grace," "justified," pronounce not guilty in God's court of Law.

Now with that legal context in mind, let us again read Romans 6:14-15. to clarify the definition of sin, let us use the term "lawlessness." [361] "For lawlessness shall not have dominion over you; for ye are not under the law, but under grace."

In other words, because you are Christians, your past sins ("lawlessness") no longer have dominion over you, forcing you to work to pay off the debt for your sins, because you are not under the judgment of the law, but under the grace of the law.

Verse 15: "What then? shall we sin (be lawless), because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid."

Thus, Paul teaches us that just because Christ has paid the full penalty for our lawbreaking, this does not mean that we now have a license to go out and break God's law whenever we so desire. The whole force of Romans 6 is to instruct the Christian to obey God and His Law. The point to

remember is that people are "under the law" for as long as it takes to pay the debt incurred by sin. People are "under grace" as soon as that debt has been paid. But in no case can we say that those who are under grace may now break the law with legal immunity.

**Question: If God Is a God of Love, Why Did He Allow so Many Wars in the Old Testament and All through History up to the Present Time?**

**Answer:** The Bible does, in deed, tell us that "God is love." [362]

The key to this question is in our understanding of the concept of love. Time and time again we are commanded to love God and keep His commandments. Without obedience, love is not perfected, for love is perfected in obedience to law.[363]

If Mr. A kills Mr. B, would you, as a lawful judge release Mr. A from any lawful penalty, under the pretext of love? After all, if you impose any penalty upon him, it wouldn't be showing him love, would it? Who will you love, the criminal or the victim?

God's judgments were given to deal with sin in a practical manner. It is not love to allow ungodly people to victimize others. War between nations must be carried out in the same spirit as we are to wage war against criminals in society, when there is international injustice committed. The inhabitants of Canaan were a very perverse and ungodly people by God's standards, and it was for this reason Israel was commanded to destroy them. Israel's calling is to teach and to enforce the Divine Law in the earth. In the case of the Canaanites, the Law called for the death penalty. Yes, God could have destroyed them all Himself, if He so desired; just as He did with Sodom and Gormorra, but He had delegated this responsibility to Israel as His representative government. Thus, God not only allowed this warfare, but He actually commanded it.

**Question: Is the Worldwide Church of God the One and Only True Church? And Was Herbert W. Armstrong the**



## One and Only Apostle under Christ in This End of the Age?

**Answer:** No doubt there are a great number of Christians who are members of the Worldwide Church of God, whose names are also written in heaven. [364] However, we do not believe that God photocopies the names written on Earthly church rolls and transcribes them onto the rolls of heaven.

Those who claim to approach God have made their organization (or their leader) into a mediator between God and man. 1 Timothy 2:5 says, "For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus."

A mediator is a go-between who functions as a point of contact between God and men. A mediator may be a person or an object of some kind (called an "idol"). A mediator says, "Come to me, and I will approach God for you; you cannot approach God by yourself, and thus you cannot become a true Christian without my help."

1 Peter 2:9 says of Israel that they are a royal priesthood (a kingdom of priests). We are all priests, and we must approach God through a single High Priest, Jesus, our Mediator. And keep in mind that the Scriptures speak of priests and high priests, but there is no office in between.

Thus, if we are all priests, and Christ is our High Priest, [365] then anyone who insinuates himself between us and Jesus Christ is either usurping the office of Christ or else creating an entirely new office. In either, his professed position is false. The Corinthian church faced this problem years ago, when men were saying, "I am Paul; and another, I am of Apollos." [366] In other words, they were saying, "I approached God (became a Christian) through Paul or Appollos." Paul refuses to compete with Apollos for the office of high priest, through which men were to approach God. In fact, he calls their preference for one man over another as causing envy, strife, and division.



In verse 22 he includes Cephas (Peter). Thus, Paul was teaching that none of the above men were God's special high priests through whom we must approach God. The reason is given in verse 23: "Ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's."

Our conclusion is this: Our position in the "true Church" depends upon our position "in Christ," not upon our position in any person or organization on earth. And once "in Christ," we have free access to the throne of God[367] purely on the merits of Christ, whose righteousness has been imputed to us by faith.[368] Herbert W. Armstrong is denying and blaspheming the finished work of Christ when he preaches that he, Herbert Armstrong, is in any way responsible for your salvation.

**Question: 1 John 3:15 Says, "No Murderer Hath Eternal Life Abiding in Him." Is Murder a Forgivable Sin? Does This Include Abortions? Accessories to Murder or Abortion? Those Causing Death from Pollution of Air, Earth, Water, Foods, and Pharmaceuticals?**

**Answer:** If Earthly courts were enforcing God's Law, then in that sense, premeditated murder is not forgivable.

We are to "take no satisfaction (substitution) for the life of a murderer," [369], including those who commit abortion and who are accessories. The sixth commandment, "Thou Shalt Not Kill," certainly includes all of the above, including pollution, although in that case its practical application in earthly courts would have to be limited, or else we would all be executed. Keep in mind that violation of the commandments is never unforgivable in the ultimate sense (i.e., at the Great Judgment). King David committed murder and adultery, [370] for which he repented, and yet he shall rule in God's Kingdom. [371]

1 John 3:15 was not speaking of our future reward so much as our present inward condition. We are to have this life abiding in us right now (by imputation, not by actual fact of being immortal now). Those who hate their brothers show by their actions and attitudes that



they do not have this life abiding in them. This verse is actually a solemn warning, which we would all do well to heed.

### **Question: What Is the Seal in the Foreheads of the 144,000?**

**Answer:** In Ezekiel 9:4 we find that when God destroyed the old City of Jerusalem, He first "Set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof."

These were the righteous Judeans who were to be spared in the coming destruction. Here, the mark clearly signified divine protection.

Servants in ancient times were marked with the seal of their owners in their foreheads. Ephesians 1:13-14 say in part, "In whom also after that ye have believed, ye were sealed with the holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest (down-payment) of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession."

Thus the seal can refer to the fact that God owns Israel, with the idea that with God's seal they will be protected until they acquire their full inheritance in God's Kingdom.

Such protection does not necessarily mean keeping alive physically, but points to the resurrection. 2 Corinthians 1:21-22 and Ephesians 4:30 make it plain the sealing is not done by any man, but by God Almighty through the Holy Spirit "unto the day of redemption."

### **Question: I Told a Person That We Are the Children of Israel, and She Said That Ruth in the Bible Was a Foreigner, so That Blood Line Wasn't All White, and That Is Why the Jews Are Israel.**

**Answer:** Suppose Ruth was non-White, as your friend says. How would that make the Jews Israelites?

If Mr. Smith (an Anglo-Saxon) were to marry a black girl, would that make Sammie Davis Jr. an Israelite? There is no necessary connection between Ruth's racial background and the Jews being Israelites.

Secondly, the Bible does not say that Ruth was non-white. It simply says she was a Moabitess. That could mean that she was an Israelite resident of Moab who had lived there for some time, or it could mean that she was descended from the man named Moab. Let us suppose she was descended from Moab. Genesis 11 tells us that Abraham's brother Haran begat Lot; and Genesis 19 tells us that Lot had two sons, Moab and Ammon. Thus, Moab and Ammon were of the same racial background as Abraham.

Therefore, even if Ruth were descended from Moab, this would not automatically make her non-white. In Deuteronomy 23:3 the Moabites and Ammonites were to be excluded from the congregation of Israel. To say that Ruth was a "racial Moabite" would raise serious questions regarding God's keeping His own Law. It is much more probable that Ruth was an Israelite whose street address was Moab. It was common to travel to another country, as is evidenced by Ruth 1:1.

If my ancestors came from England to America, and I were not to move to England, they would call me an American, not an Englishman. In like manner, if Ruth's grandparents moved to Moab, say, to escape famine. Ruth herself would be called a Moabitess. But whether Ruth was an Israelite or a true Moabitess, there is no reason to accuse her of being non-white.

### **Question: Who were the Nicolaitanes of Revelation 2?**

**Answer:** This may possibly refer to a small sect within the Church of Ephesus, to whom this verse is directed. If so, there is no historical record of it other than here. Some say that it refers to followers of some man named Nicolas, and they attached no further meaning to the word. Others,

however, break the word down into two Greek words, "nikao" (to overcome) and "laos" (the people, or laity). Thus, the essential meaning of the word would be "to overcome the laity."

One of the most ancient of problems has been the evil practice of a priestly caste lording it over the flock, as though they had special privileges and a God-given right to expect obedience from the people. Matthew 23:8 says, "but be not ye called Rabbi: for One is your master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren." (Rabbi means "my master.") Peter also roundly denounces those elders of the churches who abuse their brethren: "Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock." [372]

### **Question: In the Sealing of the 144,000 Why Did the Bible Leave Out the Names of Ephraim and Dan? Were They Cut off from Israel, as Some Say?**

**Answer:** Joseph, you recall, had two sons, Ephraim and Manasseh. The listing in Revelation 7, however, lists Joseph in the place of Ephraim.

This is proper, since Ephraim was the prime inheritor of the birthright along with Manasseh, his brother. Thus, we should understand "Joseph" to be referring specifically to Ephraim. So Ephraim is not really left out at all.

There have been many attempts to explain the omission of these tribes, especially that of Dan. A popular view (mostly among futurists) is that the tribe of Dan was blotted out from Israel for their idolatry, and they often include Ephraim as well in this exclusion from Israel. This interpretation is based upon Deuteronomy 29:18-20, where God warns Israel that if any man, woman, family, or tribe turns away from God, He would blot out their names from under heaven.

Dan and Ephraim were said to be the most idolatrous tribes, and therefore, they were blotted out of the registry of Israel forever.

We disagree on the following grounds:

(1) All of the tribes were guilty of idolatry, and even though the golden calves were set up in Dan and Bethel (capital cities of Dan and Ephraim), yet all of the tribes were more than willing to worship them, and all should share the blame equally. This is supported by the simple fact that all of the tribes were deported to Assyria and divorced from God.

(2) The rest of Deuteronomy 29 makes it clear that God was looking ahead to the dispersion of All the tribes. Verse 28 defines the judgment as being cast into another land. Thus, the phrase, "blot out his name from under heaven," does not refer to an absolute and total destruction of those two tribes, but rather to dispersion. Since God had married Israel and Mt. Sinai, this blotting out was the divorce.

(3) Ephraim was the prime holder of the Israel birth-right. We find it inconceivable that God would give the birthright to a tribe that would ultimately be completely lost and "blotted out."

(4) Hosea castigates the tribe of Ephraim more so than any other tribe. And yet his last words to Ephraim were of comfort in the midst of judgment. Hosea 13:12-14 says: "The iniquity of Ephraim is bound up; his sin is hid. The sorrows of a travailing woman shall come upon him; he is an unwise son; for he should not stay long in the places of the breaking forth of children. I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death; O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction." Those words would be inappropriate for a tribe that had been "blotted out."

(5) Ezekiel 37:16-20 tells us that the stick of Ephraim-Joseph shall be united with the stick of Judah in the latter days. This would be impossible if Ephraim were blotted out.

(6) In Ezra 6:17, which occurred 200 years after Ephraim and Dan had been deported into Assyria with the rest of Israel, we find that Ezra offered up sacrifices "for all Israel, twelve he goats, according to the number of the tribes of Israel." These 12 tribes were not all present in the land, of course. (The genealogical records in Ezra and Nehemiah list only Judah, Benjamin and Levi). However, they offered up sacrifices for all the tribes, because this signified that they understood the prophetic writings to mean that all of the tribes would one day be united in God's Kingdom. This alone proves that Ephraim and Dan could not possible have been blotted out forever in the absolute sense.

(7) The tribe of Dan appeared first in Ireland as the "Tuatha de Danaans" (which means "tribeship of Dan"). The subsequent history of Northern Ireland, where this tribe settled, would not seem to indicate that they had been utterly cast away as a tribe in Israel.

Another viewpoint, which we consider as having the most merit, is based upon the historical interpretation of Revelation. The sealing of the 12 tribes was a historical necessity, in order to preserve the Israelites from destruction as they migrated into Europe from Assyria. The Roman Empire was threat, so God placed His seal of protection upon them. Now you recall that the land allotted to the tribe of Dan in Palestine during the days of Joshua was not taken from the Philistines until the time of David. The Danites were not about to wait for 400 years to inherit land of their own, so within 5 years of their entering Canaan, they began to strike out on their own.[373] Deborah even criticized the tribe of Dan for remaining in their ships, while their brethren were at war.[374]

The fact is, the tribe of Dan colonized many places. The "Danai" were some of the most notable Greek warriors mentioned in Homer's The Iliad.

The "Tuatha de Danaans" were another branch of Danites that settled first in Spain, then in Ireland. Thus, according to this view, the tribe of Dan was not in special need of divine protection from the Roman legions, because Dan was out of her reach. For this reason, Dan was omitted from the list of sealed tribes.

### **Question: There Is so Much in the Old Testament That Speaks against Usury in the Bible; What Does the New Testament Say about It?**

**Answer:** Usury is mentioned only twice in the New Testament: Matthew 25:27 and Luke 19:23.

These two passages are two accounts of the same parable which Christ taught the people. Basically, the story goes like this: A man gave his servants charge over his goods while he went on a journey. One servant he gave five talents (money), another two, and another just one. The first two servants each doubled their money through good (lawful) business dealings. But the last one buried the talent and did nothing with it. When it came time for the rewards to be passed out, the first two servants were rewarded accordingly.

The unproductive servant then presented his single talent with these words: "Lord, I knew (ginosko) thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed; And I was afraid and went and hid thy talent in the earth; lo, there thou hast that is thine." [375]

In Luke's account, he said, "I feared thee, because thou are an austere (dry, hard, or harsh) man." Jesus then gives the verdict: "Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest (oida) that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers (bankers), and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury." [376]

Luke's account is basically the same, even using the same Greek word "oida." This is very important. The wicked servant said, "Lord, I knew



(ginosko) thee that thou art a hard man." The Lord replies, "Thou knewest (oida)..."

Why is there a difference in wording here? "Ginosko" means "to know by experience or by observation." "Oida" means "to know subjectively, to understand or perceive, or to be under the impression of something." Thus, the wicked servant in effect said, "Lord I knew by experience and observation that you are a hard man, stealing crops that you did not plant, so I was afraid to do anything with your talent, lest I should lose it and incur your vengeance."

His Lord answers, "You lazy bum, if you really were under the impression that I was a hard man and a thief, you should have loaned out the money at usury and increased my money by stealing from the poor!" In other words, Jesus here is equating usury with reaping what you have not sown and harvesting where you have not planted. Such theft is to farming what usury is to economics. That is all the New Testament has to say about usury. We can see, Christ considered it to be stealing. He certainly did not condone it.

### **Question: Who is the Antichrist?**

**Answer:** The term "Antichrist appears in only four verses of the New Testament. All four verses are in First and Second John.

**1 John 2:18:** "Little children, it is the last time; and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time."

**1 John 2:22:** "Who is a liar, but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist that denieth the Father and the Son."


**1 John 4:3:** "And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God; and this is that spirit of antichrist..."

**2 John 7:** "For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist..."

It is obvious from reading these passages that John had no conception of some great individual at the end of the age rising up to a position of great power and all the world worshiping him. His concept is clearly that there were many antichrists already in the world, and that whoever does not confess that Jesus Christ came in the flesh is the antichrist. The term "antichrist" comes from two Greek words, "anti" ("instead of, in place of, in the room of") and "Christos" "Christ, the anointed"). Thus, the term "antichrist" literally refers to someone who stands in the place of Christ, either as a Vice-Christ or as a usurper of Christ's rightful position.

John obviously treats the antichrists as people who stand in the place of Christ as usurpers. They deny that Jesus is the Christ, because they themselves have become Christ. They also deny that Jesus Christ really came in the flesh, and here one must know a little history to understand the accusation which John levels at these people. In John's day a sect had arisen called Gnosticism. The Gnostics (from gnosis, "knowledge") attempted to combine the "knowledge" of all the mystery religions of Babylon, Egypt, and Greece with Christianity. This religion adopted the dualism of the Greeks (i.e., matter is evil, and spirit is good).

In applying Greek dualism to Christianity, they came up with a doctrine called Docetism. This doctrine stated that the "Christ image" (spiritual, immortal, and good) inhabited a fleshly body (material, mortal, and evil) called "Jesus."

In making the distinction between Jesus and the Christ image, they denied that Jesus was the Christ, teaching instead that "Christ" merely inhabited the body of Jesus. The result was that they denied that Christ died for our sins. Rather, only Jesus' BODY died on the Cross. Christ Himself did not really die, they said (contrary to Romans 8:34). Thus, these docetic Gnostics undermined the Cross and the basis of justification. John had these heretics in mind when he wrote in John  1:14, "And the

Word was made flesh." The Word did not merely inhabit a flesh body; it was literally made flesh. The "antichrist" banner was carried by different people and groups all through the middle ages. Today we have witnessed a revival of the doctrines of Mystery Babylon in various guises.

In modern occult circles it is taught that man can become Christ through various means. One such religious group are the Jews, whose Zionist rabbis are teaching that the Jewish State is their Messiah (Christ). This is not surprising, since the Jews have solid control of the occult as a whole.

Thus, Judaism has taken on the antichrist banner, for they not only deny that Jesus is the Christ, but they claim to stand in the place of Christ. They are usurpers.

One should keep in mind also that the modern concept of "the Antichrist" is reached by assuming that the "beasts" of the book of revelation are the same as "the Antichrist." While there may be some connection, these terms are different and should not be treated as being synonymous.

### **Question: Micah 4:10 Sounds as Though the Daughter of Zion Is to Bring Forth a Child. Can You Explain?**

**Answer:** Yes, the daughter of Zion is to bring forth a child.

Micah 4:10 reads, "Be in pain and labour to bring forth, O daughter of Zion, like a woman in travail; for now shalt thou go forth out of the city, and thou shalt dwell in the field, and thou shalt go even to Babylon; there shalt thou be delivered; there the Lord shall redeem thee from the hand of thine enemies." The daughter of Zion is not an individual person, but the latter-day nation of regathered Israel. She is pictured as a woman in travail, and her child (like her) is a prophetic nation, the next stage in the future development of the Kingdom of God on the earth.

This is made evident in Isaiah 66:7-8, which reads: "Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. Who hath heard such a thing? Who hath seen such things? Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? Or shall a nation be born at once? For

as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children." It is obvious that this man child is a nation that was to be born in the end of the age after the establishment of the daughter of Zion (nation).

The birth pangs, according to Micah 4:9, are caused by the people's forgetting that they have a king (Jesus Christ); i.e., forgetting that they are a Christian Nation. As a result, they would "go even to Babylon" (vs. 10) into captivity to Mystery Babylon. There the daughter of Zion would be delivered of her child and be redeemed from the hand of her enemies. The Kingdom Age would begin. The man child which the daughter of Zion brought forth is also mentioned in Revelation 12:5, where it is said that he is "to rule all nations with a rod of iron." A cleansed Israel with Christ at its head shall rule all nations.

### **Question: Were Galileans Also Referred to as Judeans, or Were They Distinctly Separate?**

**Answer:** The term "Galilean" is purely a geographical term.

Galilee was a province in northern Palestine that had been settled by the tribe of Benjamin after the Babylonian captivity. The Judahites settled in the southern part of the territory, eventually forming a province called "Judea." The term "Galilean" is a geographical term, since there is no "tribe of Galilee," as is with Judea (Judah). Jesus was a Galilean by geography, according to Luke 23:6, because He lived in Galilee. However, by genealogy He was a Judahite.

On occasion the term Judean ("Jew") is used in the Old Testament sense, where it includes Judah, Benjamin, and Levi, who were of the southern House of Judah. Thus, we find in places like Romans 1:16 that the term Judean includes the Galileans (Benjamites) as well as the Judeans. Usually, however, the word Judean is used to distinguish that person from a Galilean or Samaritan.

### **Question: Why Did the Judeans Not Associate with the Samaritans? Were Not the Samaritans Israelites? If Not, What Was the Genetic Relationship?**

**Answer:** The Judeans did not associate with the Samaritans, because of their conflict recorded in the Books of Ezra and Nehemiah.

Samaria was the capital city of the 10-tribed house of Israel during the time of the divided Kingdom before the captivities. It was built by king Omri of Israel, and thus the Assyrians called Israel by the name Beth-Khumri ("House of Omri"). In 724 B.C. Shalmanezer began the siege of Samaria, and the city fell to his successor, Sargon, the years later.

The Assyrians deported 27,280 people from the city, as almost all of them had already been deported earlier. Even so, many of the Israelites were left behind. Sargon settled many colonists from Babylonia and Hamath,[377] and his grandson, Esarhaddon, and later monarchs continued this policy introducing Elamites into the land as well. Thus, they had an "integrated society."

During this time the foreign colonists, who were idolaters, decided that the local gods of the land were unfavorable to them, so they requested that an Israelite from the Assyrian captivity come and teach them the ways of their God. The result was a curious mixture of idolatry and the Law of Moses. (They rejected the writings of the prophets, accepting only the Law of Moses).

These were the people that the Judeans found in the land two centuries later when they returned to rebuild Jerusalem and the temple. When Ezra and Nehemiah would have nothing to do with those who had intermarried and those who had a mixed religion, the conflict began between the Judeans and these "Samaritans," as they came to be called. One of the Samaritan governors, Sanballat[378] opposed the rebuilding of the walls of Jerusalem. He later built the Samaritan temple on Mt. Gerazim.

Their doctrines did not differ greatly from that of the Judean Sadducees of Christ's day. So to answer your question, the Judeans did not associate with the Samaritans, because of their conflict recorded in the books of Ezra and Nehemiah. Some of the Samaritans, at least originally, were of Israelite stock, being "leftover" from the Assyrian captivity. However, as

time passed, there would have been fewer and fewer of them who remained unmixed, especially since those who could prove their pure Israelite genealogy were welcomed into the Judean community.

**Question: Were the Rothschilds Jews? How Did They Get so Powerful That They Can Control Nations and Give Money to Lenin in Support of Communism?**

**Answer:** Yes, the Rothschilds are Jews.

Stephen Birmingham's book, *"Our Crowd - Great Jewish Families of New York"* states on pages 24 and 25 (speaking of another Jew, August Schonberg): "He wanted to make money. At thirteen he went to Frankfurt, it is likely that he ran away from home, and went to work as an unpaid apprentice for the Rothschilds, the leading Jewish banking house in Europe."

The house of Rothschild (i.e., "Red Shield") became powerful through banking, which gave them the right to create money. But they always had to be somewhat fearful that this right to create money would be taken away from them by the monarchs of Europe or by the people themselves.

Thus, they decided it was in their best interests to gain absolute power over the people and governments. (Of course, they had always sought to gain power over us). For further reading into the way they financed communism and took over Russia, see "Behind Communism," by Frank Britton.

**Question: I Didn't See It in the Bible, but I Heard It Said That the Yellow Race Will Rule the World. Is This True?**

**Answer:** No matter what race or religion you study, you will find that almost all of them believe that theirs will some day rule the world. It is rooted in the age-old argument; whose god is the most powerful? It has always been assumed that the most powerful and prosperous people is the



one who has the most powerful god. To put it another way, each god has its own "chosen people" who worship that god, and the chosen people of the most powerful god will eventually rule the world. The religion of Christian Israel is no exception. The name "Israel" means "ruling with God." When God married Israel at Mt. Sinai, He gave her authority over His household (creation - see Psalm 104).

The main difference between our God and foreign gods in this matter is that our God will not allow His wife to misrule His creation. Thus, as long as Israel is in violation of His Law, God does not expect the other nations to concur in her sin and be obedient to her self-made laws. That is why God has turned most nations against us today.

But to answer your question directly, the Bible does not teach that the yellow race will rule the world, for the God of Israel did not marry them.

### **Question: I Am Confused about the Time of Joel. Why Were Farm Tools to Be Changed into Implements of War?**

**Answer:** Joel 3:10 shows us that this is speaking of the future time when Israel would be invaded at the end of the age.

"Proclaim ye this among the Gentiles (nations); Prepare war, wake up the mighty men, let all the men of war draw near; let them come up: Beat your ploughshares into swords, and your pruning hooks into spears: let the weak say, I am strong." [379] The context of this verse clearly shows that this is speaking of the future time when Israel would be invaded at the end of the age.

In ancient times there was often a shortage of metal suitable for manufacturing armaments, so the people would often have to melt down their farm tools and then fashion them into implements of war. Since farm tools were so important to an agricultural society, this shows just how urgent was the need to arm the nation against the enemy.

We have such a situation today, where America has been disarmed. We don't know if we will ever have to melt down our tractors to build missiles, but the point is that the Bible says in the latter days Israel (America) would be in urgent need of military equipment.

We might also add, that Joel 3:10 should be read along with Isaiah 2:4, "And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people; and they shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruning hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." This prophesies a time when Christ would be in rulership over the earth, and there would be no more war.

Only under the rulership of Christ can we safely disarm and put our efforts back into production of real wealth, rather than into military hardware.

### **Question: Is Cremation after Death Contrary to God's Law?**

**Answer:** There is no specific passage prohibiting cremation, nor is there any command to practice it. In all Bible records of the disposition of the body of an Israelite, it was by burial and not by cremation. The Canaanites burned children in fire as an offering to Baal, and God condemned Israel for joining such a terrible practice. In Christ's times all were buried, except that criminals were burned in the garbage dump called "gehenna" (translated "hell" in the KJV). Jesus warned believers to avoid "gehenna," meaning not to sin and have their bodies burned.

Also, many pagan religions practice cremation, which alone would warrant our being opposed to it. With these many arguments against cremation, and no positive Bible command for it, we conclude it is God's will that Israelites be buried not cremated. However, the fact that some are burned will have no effect on the resurrection. Even the sea will give up its dead on resurrection day, for which we praise Almighty God and the Lord Jesus Christ.



## **Question: Many Identity Ministers Claim There Is No Devil, Please Explain Their Thinking?**

**Answer:** The Bible speaks of "Devils," but not the kind taught in most Judeo-Christian churches.

The Bible does speak of "devils," but not the kind taught in most churches. The word "devil," in 1 Peter 5:8, is the English translation from the Greek word, **Diabolos**. It means "traducer," "false accuser," "slander." Therefore, a devil can be anyone, or any group, who plots and schemes, purposely seeking to hurt you. The devil of 1 Peter 5:8 is particularly interesting in light of the fact the Greek word rendered "adversary" in this passage is **anti-dikos**, which means "opponent at law." This is the word used in Matthew 5:25, Luke 12:58 and Luke 14:3.

Notice the obvious intent of this Greek word in those verses. The "anti-dikos" can not be a supernatural creature who literally "devours" people physically. No, it is an opposing party at law, which could refer to either the courts or government. At that time, and since, many Christians have been "devoured" in pagan courts and by pagan rulers.

The courts and civil authorities operated under the non-Christian religion of their day, were viciously opposed to Christians, and therefore were likened to a "roaring lion."

In times past, Israel's own religious and civil authorities had become paganised. They oppressed God's People and Yahweh God describes them in Ezekiel 22:25-17 as, "roaring lions ravaging the prey," and "wolves ravaging the prey, to shed blood and destroy souls, to get dishonest gain."

Peter recognized the conspiracy of the civil and religious authorities of his day. He was warning his fellow Christians that these wicked rulers were seeking to "devour" them by devising laws which would oppose and harm them. These rulers were adverse to Christians, their "adversaries," i.e., "devils" likened to "a roaring lion." Peter would also have known Proverbs 28:15 where Solomon tells us that "a wicked ruler over the poor people" is "a roaring lion."

In Ephesians 6:10-12, Paul described this "devil" as "wicked rulers in high places," and warns of their "wiles," or devious plans. Paul, after having survived the courts of Caesar, says he was "delivered out of the mouth of the lion," in 2 Timothy 4:17. In Revelation 2:10, Christ says, "Behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried..." Did Jesus mean that some supernatural, fallen angel would come down and put you in jail? No, He meant those with civil or ecclesiastical authority over you "devils" would imprison you.

This governmental "devil," even in Jesus' time, was constantly seeking any evidence or information to hold against the Christians. Jesus was saying this would continue and it has. The "devils" still oppose Christians. Thus we see, in these cases, the meaning of the word "devil" is simply: False Accuser. Now we can understand Paul's warning in 2 Corinthians 2:5-11, 1 Timothy 3:1-7, and 2 Timothy 2:24-26 where believers are admonished to act prudently toward fellow believers, and before the world. It was so they would not give the non-Christian adversary (the devils) any reason for lawful accusation.

There are other devils in the Bible. The word "**Diabolos**" is used to describe people who bedevil you. In John 6:70, Judas is called a **Diabolos**; 1 Timothy 3:11, wives are warned against being **Diabolos** (slanderers); 2 Timothy 3:3, men in the last days are accused of being **Diabolo**i (false accusers); Titus 2:3, aged women are warned not to be **Diabolos** (false accusers).

So you see, real "devils" do exist. We recognize real, physical devils, as described in the scripture. However, many churches seem to believe, and are not teaching others, that "the devil" is a literal, supernatural, "fallen angel" creature named "Satan." Their description of this "Devil" presents him as a "bad god" who is ruling this present world and is waging war against the "good God." This teaching is incompatible with the true Bible doctrine of monotheism (there is only one God) and hides the fact that non-Christian rulers are the real "devils."

We do not claim that there are no devils. Our research has shown that "devils" are men, and organizations of men. The traditional "devil

doctrine" which is taught in most Judeo-Christian churches is a horrendous error. We believe that the churches have received their "devil theology," not from the Bible, but from pagan productions like the Jewish Talmud, writings of Zoroaster, and Gnostic spiritism referred to in 1 John 4:1-6. These "fables" point Christians at a supernatural Devil as their enemy and hides from them the truth that their real enemies are flesh and blood people. While they look for this non-existent "devil," the real "devils" are taking control of the earth.

We conclude that the common devil theories do not come from the Bible. They come from paganism, they teach idolatry (worship of false gods) and we flatly reject those teachings.

Isaiah tells us: "I am the Lord, and thee is none else, there is no God beside me: I girded thee, through thou hast not known me: That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me: I am the Lord, and there is none else. I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things." [380]

**Question: What is "The Original Sin?"**

**Answer:** The Bible does not refer to "An Original Sin" per se.

The phrase appears only in theological writings. Thus, the "original sin" doctrine is a confusing one. "Orthodox" church tradition has it that Adam and Eve were created immortal, and then lost that immortality when they disobeyed God's instructions and "ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil." this is based upon the concept that they were immortal while they were ignorant and innocent, but when "their eyes were opened" they became knowledgeable and "wise," "sinned," and found that they were suddenly mortal, i.e., "the original sin" caused mortality.

This widely accepted, and almost totally misunderstood doctrine, attempts to align ignorance with righteousness and immortality, and knowledge with sin and death. This erroneous doctrine causes many Bible students to stumble at the very beginning of the Bible, this perverting and misconstruing the majority of Bible doctrines which follow the creation

story. Initial mortality must have been God's plan for man from the beginning! If this is not so, God made a mistake. If God made a mistake, if man could do something that foul up God's plan for Him, then God is not all-powerful. Only if God is NOT all-powerful, could man (Adam) have done something to change God's plan.

The creation sequence, in relation to mortality-immortality, is outlined in 1 Corinthians 15:45-50, where we plainly see that the natural progression is from "the natural" to "the spiritual." Not the other way around. In fact, by the very definition of the word, while immortality can be granted by God, It cannot be taken away.

A person who is immortal is not susceptible to death, which also means that he is not susceptible to sin (sin death). Therefore, immortality equals sinlessness. If Adam and Eve had an "immortality" which could be lost, then they didn't really have immortality in the first place, did they? By the same token, we are mortal today, not because Adam sinned, but because we are descendants of Adam and made of flesh. Flesh must die. We cannot blame that on Adam, except to realize that Adam was also flesh, and we are his descendants.

When God took on a body of flesh, in the person of Jesus, he did so in order to become mortal: i.e., capable of temptation, sin, and death.[381] Jesus, just as any man born to woman, was "born in sin" in that he was born of mortal flesh.[382]

**Psalm 51:5 says;** "Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me."

David did not mean that the act which brought him into being was iniquitous or sinful. David simply meant that he was conceived and shapen in a mortal body that was "in sin," i.e., capable of sinning. In fact, God created man in such a way as to give him a propensity toward sin.

**Romans 8:20 says:** "For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope, because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of

corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God." It is God's will. If anyone is the cause of man being mortal and having a sinful nature, it is God Himself.

Of course, to suggest that He is in error because He did it that way is the height of folly.

**The logical steps are:**

1). Man was created "a living soul." [383] By definition, a "living soul" is something that is flesh and blood, breathes air, and is alive. Men, animals, fish, and birds are included under this general heading. All are mortal.

2). Man sinned. [384] The fact that man could sin precludes the possibility of his being created immortal. Sin causes death. Therefore if someone is capable of sin, he is not immortal. [385] If man had been created immortal, he would have been incapable of sin, and therefore not susceptible to death.

3). Mortality for us is not a punishment; it is an integral part of God's good will for us. [386] His plans for us transcend our finite minds, and reach into glories un-dreamed. Paul said that he considered the loss of earthly things to be gain in Christ. [387] God told him [388] that he did not need good health, eternal life, or miracles in order to magnify the grace of God. God's grace is magnified through the weakness of man.

4). Finally, we see the immensity of the error involved in the false doctrine that man had or now has immortality. Jesus; "Only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see." [389] Indeed, if Adam and Eve had been immortal initially, they would not have had need for the blood of Jesus, for they would have been sinless.

Much more could be said about the assumption by many that since Adam and Eve had immortality (we've seen that is false), that therefore mortality was put upon them to be a curse or a punishment from God.

## **Question: What Is the Difference between "The Law of God," "The Law of Moses," and "The Law of Christ?"**

**Answer:** The Law of Yahweh God (the God of Israel) is eternal and over all.

It is truth expressed in the form of principles. Beyond our knowledge, these principles still exist as truths. They exist with or without our knowledge of them. Moses' Law came from God's Law. God gave it to Moses. Although it didn't contain every principle of God's universal, eternal law, all of it was God's. Through Moses, Israel's God gave them the laws that they needed to form a civil government at that time.

The Law of Christ[390] is God's Law also. Jesus said He could do nothing of His own, only that which the Father does.[391] The law that Jesus taught was the Law of God, which included many precepts found written in the Law of Moses. In fact, Jesus said that He didn't come to do away with the law, but to fulfill it.[392]

There is one supreme set of laws; eternal, and never changing. There have been some different applications of that law, but never a replacement for the foundation principles. In Moses' case, he was given laws which were prescribed for the situation at hand.

Those laws are good, and they worked. They will still work when and where the situation is applicable. Those national government laws were used to set up the American government, and they worked! They would work today if we would use them correctly.

They are simple, understandable, and educational. They make sense! But they militate against our fleshly nature, and we tend to hate them for that. That is why we don't see them in use more. Moses and Jesus both explained the laws of God. Both at a different time in history, and in a

different application nationally. Both were good explanations, and both were applicable. The sacrifices were no longer applicable after Jesus' sacrifice, but the national laws were (and are) still viable.

### **Question: Who Are the Two Witnesses of Revelation 11?**

**Answer:** Both Moses and Elijah left lasting impressions upon Israel. Their influence was prophesied to project over into our day. "My Two Witnesses" is another name for these two, as used in Revelation 11:3.

A vision of the same two appeared with Jesus on the mountain of transfiguration.[393] These two prophets epitomize: #1). The Law, and #2). Prophecy (or more correctly, the preaching which causes repentance). Elijah is known as the great preacher-prophet in Israel. Moses was the Law Giver. Together, their reference suggests the spirit of Repentance (caused by preaching), and obedience to the Law (God's Laws, statutes, and judgments). The "reappearance" of this kind of motivation in Israel (the Spirit of Moses and Elijah) means that the preachers must preach repentance in the spirit of Elijah, and the people must turn and accept the Law in the spirit of Moses. Thus, these two witnesses would, as it were, reappear.[394] This is not reincarnation. Don't look for any actual persons. Rather, look for the animating motivation in the people.

### **Question: How Can We Untrained Laymen Understand the Bible and Its Message When Most Churches and Ministers Have Misinterpreted It?**

**Answer:** The question is an indictment against us all!

How did we become uneducated? When will we begin to rectify this ignorance? Why should Christians be dependant upon a few "elite" who say that they alone are able to effectively study the Bible? Remember, ministers are usually less capable of interpreting the Bible than any other class of people. The theological seminaries do not teach Bible interpretation, but instruct the student how to defend the various creeds, and how to choke off investigation, and to make the investigator feel

foolish. Generally speaking, nothing troubles ministers more than Bible questions.

Our advice, to those who want to know The Truth, is to search the Scriptures, and use concordances and every Bible help that will assist them in proper and rational understanding. Be sure the subject is approached honestly and prayerfully, with a greater desire to know the truth than to defend prejudices and presuppositions.

Don't think, however, that you can arrive at good answers without investing sufficient time and effort. Bible study is the same as any other topic of study in this one respect, namely that the results will reflect the amount of effort you put into it. Don't expect a good working knowledge of the Bible to come from prayer alone.

Service to God is best seen as "less inspiration and more perspiration." Personal effort and expertise is no less needed in the service of Christ than it is in the business world. No lazy Christian will achieve a high rank of service under Christs' reign today, any more than a lazy executive can achieve success in the business world. Remember, "faith without works is dead." [395]

### **Question: In the Parable of the Talents, in Luke 19, Doesn't Jesus Advise Us to Take Interest on Money?**

**Answer:** No, He doesn't!

The reference to interest-taking is clearly a reference to robbery. The logic is this: if "the master" was "an hard man, reaping where he has not sown, and gathering where he has not strawed," as accused by the worthless servant, then he was a thief.

The servant, who claims to be aware of the fact that his master is a thief, then should have known to steal for his master by putting the money out to Usury. The servant was condemned for worthlessness on the basis of his own excuse - "out of your own mouth will I judge you." In other words, "By your own logic, you are proven faithless."



Jesus used this parable to illustrate faithlessness. The servant failed to act in any positive way. He was worthless. He could have put the money to some useful purpose, without taking usury. Or, he could have refused to serve his master if he truly thought he was a thief. But he did neither.

Therefore, his excuse was merely a lie. In this parable, Jesus (the master) never suggests that He is "an hard man, reaping where he has not sown." That was alleged by the worthless servant, not by Jesus. In fact, Jesus constructed this lesson to show plainly that usury is theft.

Jesus doesn't condemn us for not taking usury; rather, He condemns us if we refuse to take action, in faith. The servant hid the money because he was faithless, precluding any and all use of it. Like blood is to the soul, money is to the nation. It must be in circulation to fulfill the purpose of its existence. However, neither blood, nor money, is of any use when hidden away. There is not a shred of evidence here to suggest that usury is lawful.

Money is not a lawful "earner" of profit.[396] This is the principle behind the usury law. Money is unproductive of itself, and does not constitute true intrinsic wealth, but rather represents true wealth: labour and resources. it's use should be strictly to facilitate the equitable exchange of good and services. It should never be used to earn of itself, as in interest bearing debt or interest bearing investment. Any infringement of this natural common-sense law debilitates an economic system from within, destroys freedom, and leads the people into slavery.

## **Question: What Does "Zion" Mean?**

**Answer:** The word "Zion" is thought to mean "Jerusalem" by most of those who have any familiarity with the Bible.

However, this is not the case. Zion's only connection with Jerusalem was its being the temporary centre of God's reign on earth. Before God's Kingdom was set up there, as well as after His Kingdom was taken away from there, Jerusalem could not have been called "Zion." The same is true and applicable today. God's "Zion" would necessarily be the seat of His

reign on earth. We feel that His rule is manifest within the Christian sector of America, both presently and historically. No other culture has expressed the reign of God more accurately: namely, blessings for obedience, and chastisement for disobedience. An equation which helps to place an identity upon "true Israel" for today is Hebrews 12:5-8. God's people, and His seat of authority, are evidenced by these "family" interactions. The evidence is displayed throughout America's Christian history, beginning with the Colonies and their founders.

On the other hand, Jewish interests in the world have shown just the opposite: namely inconsistent judgment from the divine perspective. Jewish interests have not been judged according to their morality, but have succeeded quite often in spite of their corruption. Their political and religious prowess today is a result of the lack of God's judgment upon them, as would have been the case if He was truly amongst them. Their judgment, we therefore conclude, will be dealt out later, at a time of culmination, as all will have to answer one day.

For the above reasons, and others, we conclude that Zion is today manifest within Christendom in America, instead of Jewry in Palestine.

### **Question: I Am a Christian and Do Not Want to Deal in Usury. What Can I Do with My Money?**

**Answer:** In Luke 19:12-27, Jesus taught His disciples a lesson on values.

Our Lord wants us to pursue profit and gain, but not in unethical ways. In the parable of the unfaithful (worthless) steward, the condemnation was not for failure to take usury, but for failure to invest (this assumes that there are ethical investment options available).

This is God's will for us concerning all valuables; including money, abilities, and even life itself. Profit is not evil unless it is of an illegitimate or immoral nature. However, all usury is immoral. Therefore it stands to reason that there are ways to profit without usury. The answer is to invest in an honest enterprise. Profit from honest investment, with its equal risk of loss for all involved, is not the same as usury, providing that one does

not exact more than his share of profit from the investment. "Usury," is loosely defined as 'excessive profit.' Profit on investment, within ethical bounds, is not usury. Capital is technically the same as labor, in that the funds merely represent acquired labour-value and/or profit. Thus, with honest investment the risk of real loss is shared by all who invest, whether it be investment of funds, or investment of labour.

This is not true with the Western style usury-lending. Loans are secured with collateral, relieving the lender of the risk of loss. Both lender and borrower hope to make a profit, but the borrower is the only one risking possible loss. Sharing in the profit without sharing the risk is usury.

Profit from investment is OK; profit from lending is not. Lending is for helping the borrower; it is not for helping the lender! The borrower is not helped if he is exploited and milked of his sustenance by usury. it is a Christian's duty to help the needy if he is able; not make merchandise of him.[397]

In Deuteronomy 23:19-20, usury is precluded in respect to ALL CITIZENS of an Israel nation. it is precluded on two bases: #1). It destroys a nation's economic system from within and, #2). An Israel nation must be consistent in law [398].

The "stranger" in Deuteronomy 23:20 is an alien; one whose citizenship is in another nation. This scripture applies to Israel's relations with aliens, or with other nations (on the international level). But on the national level, all citizens, regardless of race, are equal under the law.

In Deuteronomy 10:19, and Leviticus 19:33-34, the "strangers" are other races who have become Israel citizens.

### **Question: 2 Corinthians 3:11 Seems to Say That the Law Has Been Done Away (Abolished). What Is the Correct Answer?**

**Answer:** Don't confuse "Law" with "Covenant." 2 Corinthians 3 deals with Covenants; not Law.

"Law" can be defined as "foundation principles." A "covenant" is an agreement, or plan, describing our basis of relationship to that law. The foundation principles do not change, but our relationship to the law can change, and indeed some have. In this case, the point is that the Old Covenant was abolished, and a New Covenant (Testament) has been made.[399] God's Law is nonetheless the basis for both covenants.

The Old Covenant was an agreement between Israel and her God. It detailed, in statutes and ordinances, the particular relationship agreed upon between the two parties. It was, in effect, a marriage contract based upon the foundation principles of God's Divine Law. That Old Covenant marriage was broken when Israel was unfaithful to her Husband (Yahweh), forcing Him to divorce her.

The Old Covenant was "the ministration of death:" obedience by force.[400] The New Covenant is "the ministration of the spirit:" obedience by conscience (vs. 8). The New Covenant breathed LIFE into our relationship with God and His Law. Studying and understanding Jesus causes us to have "The Right Motive" (Holy Spirit).

Previous to Jesus supplying us with "the Holy Motive," our reaction to his Law was that we would obey only because we knew that we would be punished if we didn't. However, this "Holy Motive" puts life into our conscience, causing us to obey, and not merely out of fear of punishment, nor because of promise of reward, but because we believe it is the right thing to do. The New Covenant was foretold earlier [401], and was ratified by the blood of Jesus.[402]

The New Covenant ministry has the advantage of dealing with people in whom his Holy Motive has been implanted; transplanting the law from stone, into our hearts; converting mere Israelites into Christians.

The Old Covenant only had punishment as a motive to force obedience. That is why it died on the vine: Israelites weren't motivated to obey beyond what they were forced. They obeyed only according to the letter, and no farther. Today, while our obedience and our conscience is still based upon the definition of the law; while it still originates from the latter of the law,

our motivation goes BEYOND "the letter." Today, "the letter" is just the beginning. It is a sign post, pointing us in the right direction.

Rather than the limits, or end of our concern, it is merely the starting point from which we begin to pursue the business of the Kingdom, as Sons and Heirs with a vested interest, instead of mere servants.[403] That is the essence of the Ministration of Life in the New Covenant.

### **Question: Is Gambling A Sin?**

**Answer:** The Bible does not address "Gambling" per se.

However, common sense, and Common Law does. The Common Law is based upon the Ten Commandments, and Christian Ethic. The Ten Commandments tell Christians what they shouldn't do: murder, steal, etc. In General, they tell us that we are not to hurt, or damage our fellow man.

The "Puritan Work Ethic," which is based upon Christian Ethic, is the practical application of the Common Law. This ethic would have a person earn his own keep. That means that "if you don't work, you don't eat." Like a vital nutrient, and that ethic was injected into the Colonial system of early America. The economic health of our land flourished as long as this ethic was maintained.

In spite of continual onslaught by the disease of international financiers, and other corporate enemies, America's economic health remained strong as long as the majority of us maintained our "Puritan Work Ethic." However, America has now abandoned this ethic, with the result that we are now a bankrupt nation.

The Puritan Work Ethic is not just a philosophy; it is a moral commitment to righteousness. It means that we personally refuse to place unwarranted burden upon our brother's back. If I can carry my share of the load, it is wrong for me to put it off on my brother to carry for me.

He has his own load to carry. If one is too lazy or distracted to carry his own share, he alone should suffer. You should not be forced to suffer, or

to do part of my work just because I refuse to do my part. Of course, if for some legitimate reason one is incapable of carrying his part, then that is different. We all pitch in to help him. When a society is committed to the Puritan Work Ethic, gambling simply is not tolerated because it preys upon one person in order to benefit another.

This simple truth would be more easily seen if our present society wasn't brainwashed and blinded by corrupt economic practices in the daily marketplace in which we are all forced to participate. "Gaming," or gambling, is based upon the chance that you can win money that someone else has lost. In other words, for there to be a winner, there must be some losers.

This flies in the face of the Puritan Ethic which demands that we each work and produce our own livelihood. Producing our own sustenance should not cause damage to someone else's, as with gambling. If you must suffer loss in order for me to gain, then we're doing something wrong.

### **Question: What Is Meant by the Phrase "Born Again," and How Can One Be Born a Second Time?**

**Answer:** In brief, this is one phrase so commonly used in Christianity today that it has become a slogan and sometimes a password, and needs to be clearly explained.

The Christian Bible identifies not only two deaths: physical [404] and spiritual,[405] but two births: physical [406] and spiritual "rebirth." [407] Ponder the words of the preacher in Ecclesiastes 7:1: "A good name is better than precious ointment, and the day of one's death than the day of one's birth."

How can this be? Ecclesiastes 6:3-4 speaks of the uselessness of physical birth if a man is not transformed spiritually[408] to obey God's Law, which should be written in his heart. The word here translated "birth" (nephew) indicates something fallen or aborted. This refers us to the "fall of Adam" in Genesis 3, which shows us how far from perfection we are in our mortal lives. Man's own nature is basically evil, self-serving [409] contrary to

what humanists assert. Isaiah 59:1-15 tells us why this is so. What "good fruit" we bear in this life is a by-product of spiritual rebirth, being born again (or more correctly "born of water and of spirit").

The basis of this process of renewal is repentance for our sinful nature [410]), dependence on Jesus Christ who was made an offering for our personal and national sins,[411] baptism, and an about-face in character and deed.[412]

So, being "born again" does NOT mean membership in an earthly club or clique, but becoming a vital part of the body of believers [413] which is Christ's body, the New Jerusalem of Scripture, the Kingdom of God.

### **Question: If Evil Starts in the Womb,[414] Would Jesus Pay the Death Penalty for Something He Created?[415]**

**Answer:** Think of it this way: What would the game of Chess be with no squares on the Chess Board?

As the apostle Paul related in Romans 8:20: "For the creation (Adam) was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same to hope," for we were predestinated in His purpose to be conformed to the image of His son, Jesus Christ (vs. 29). Why question the purpose of Him who has the power of life and death?

### **Question: Should Christians Drink Alcoholic Beverages? Didn't Jesus Drink Wine with His Disciples, and with Sinners?**

**Answer:** Christians should first realize that they should not yield to temptation,[416] and that it is possible for even the strongest of constitutions to be enticed into drunkenness.

The Bible does mention the use of wine. 1 Timothy 5:23 states: "Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities." Proverbs 31:4-7 seems to advocate it for the dying and

heavy-hearted, but not for leaders and teachers. Melchizedek blessed Abram with wine.[417]

The apocryphal book of Ecclesiastics has this to say: "Show not thy valiantness in wine, for wine hat destroyed many—Wine was made (from the beginning) to make men glad. Wine measurably drunken and in time, bringeth gladness and cheerfulness of the mind. But wine drunken with excess maketh bitterness of mind with brawlings and scoldings. Drunkenness increaseth the courage of a fool until he offend, diminishes his strength, and maketh wounds." [418]

The Bible also condemns drunkenness and mankind's proclivity to it.[419] Some claim that a tendency toward alcoholism is genetic through the father. Whether or not this is so, persons who cannot maintain sobriety obviously should not drink alcohol, especially when with Christians (or anyone) who might feel uncomfortable with it, so a stumbling block is not laid before them in their spiritual walk.[420]

Christians should neither inhabit bars and night clubs where drunkenness is prevalent, or nor drink alcohol with non-Christians. Of course, it is best to avoid the temptation altogether. It is quite probable that Christ and His disciples drank wine, for there was no means of refrigeration to avoid fermentation. The Cana marriage feast in John 2 is one example, but they never drank to excess, or they would have been hypocrites.

### **Question: Is There Any Scriptural Significance to the "Statue of Liberty" Found on Ellis Island?**

**Answer:** "What agreement hath the Temple of God with idols? For ye are the Temples of the Living God..."[421]

Most Americans, including many who either came through the gates of Ellis Island or have ancestors who did, are unprepared to consider the Statute of Liberty as an "idol," although it is a philosophical icon of sorts which has been used lately by humanists and globalists to represent the American "melting pot," which was not the intent of our country's founders and probably not the intent of the statue's designer, the Jewish Frederic



Barholdi. A "gift" to America from France in 1884 (although we paid most of the cost for it), the statue is that of a woman dressed in a long robe, her right arm raised, bearing a flaming torch. On her head is a "crown" of sunbeams, and nestled in her left arm a tablet bearing the date of the Declaration of Independence's signing. At her feet lies a broken shackle.

Great symbols indeed. Some may insist the woman is Israel as described in Revelation 12, at war with prophetic Babylon and the "Dragon." Perhaps, but perhaps not. Consider some other symbols: the statue is situated on Bedloe's Island upon Fort Wood, built in the shape of an 11-pointed star.

According to E. W. Bullinger in his book "Number in Scripture," while ten is the number marking the perfection of Divine Order, eleven is "an addition to it, subversive of and undoing that order—it is the number which marks disorder, disorganization, imperfection and disintegration."

Eleven is also used frequently by Masonic orders. According to some scholars, the statue was patterned on the Greek goddess Diana - associated with Astarte, Ashtoreth, Ishtar, and is a distortion of the order of authority laid down in the Bible regarding leadership of the husband.

What is liberty? Liberty is a gift which is not free. That may seem a contradiction, but it isn't, since the price paid for the gift was not paid by us, but by the sacrificial death of He only who can bestow the blessings of liberty upon a humble and repentant people,[422] and that is Christ.

James chapter one explains the "perfect law of liberty" which is Christ working within Man to establish and perfect him, and this includes government.

True liberty is undeniably tied to the "justification of life" [423] wherein freedom means the release from sin through acknowledgment of sinful nature, repentance, and baptism into The Way of Christ. This is a hard concept for most to understand. Most people associate liberty and freedom with the escape from servant status, whereas the Bible teaches that true liberty is to run to the status of a servant,[424] but as the servant of Jesus

Christ only wherein there is no bondage because our Creator gave us the freedom to choose to do good.

Is the Statue of Liberty scripturally significant? Just as the symbols on our Great Seal are interpreted in totally opposing ways (by those who understand the Kingdom Identity message, and then by the Aquarians and one-worlders), the statue will mean different things to different people. The battle remains the same, and the enemies of The Kingdom will use all means to subvert and confuse.

### **Question: Is It According to God's Law That Christians Quit Paying Income Taxes, and Quit Using Social Security Numbers?**

**Answer:** Jesus Himself once said to the Jews who sought to entrap Him, "Render unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's, and unto God the things which are God's."

His response was based on the fact that those detractors had a Caesar, an autocrat if you will, to which they were answerable. In our American Republic, we have no Caesar! Our representatives in government are not only answerable to God and to us, but to our Constitution.

When they pass legislation contrary to this document and its original intent, and when the courts hand down decisions at variance with this intent, they violate a most sacred trust, and the people are not bound by their errors.

When Peter and other apostles were brought before the Sanhedrin for preaching on Solomon's porch, they were commanded (by inferior authorities) to stop. Their response, risking life and limb, was "We ought to obey God rather than men." [425]

The principle here is one of protocol, and it applies to all governmental actions which might be adverse to investigate further. With regard to "Social Security," in whom (or what) do you put your trust? It should be in Christ alone.[426]

## **Question: I'm Torn between Two Great Patriot Claims of the Day: One Says There Is to Be an Earthly Kingdom with Christ Ruling?**

**Answer:** In the Lord's Prayer, we pray, "...thy kingdom come, thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven."

The other says no, this is a deception for British one-world government of antichrist. which is it? We know His will is done in His sphere of power and authority, but does God care to establish His Kingdom here on Earth? He does, and He already has.

## **Question: Are the Rockefellers Jews?**

**Answer:** Yes they are.

The Rockefeller Family - Secret Jews! A book overlooked by most people and published for sale mainly within the Jewish community states that the Rockefellers are Jews of Sephardic descent (meaning Spanish and Portuguese Jews).

The book is entitled "The Grandees - America's Sephardic Elite." The author is Stephen Birmingham, who is recognized by the Jewish community as an expert on Jewish history. The publisher of "The Grandees" is the Jewish owned publishing firm of "Harper and Row" of New York City. Mr. Birmingham also wrote the book "Our Crowd" about the family background of America's wealthiest and most successful Jews. Both books have been hailed by Jewish publications as first class works in the documentation of Jewish history.

In "The Grandees" Stephen Birmingham reveals the existence of a very rare book which was published only for Jews some years ago. The work was published only for Jews some years ago. The work was compiled by the Jewish historian Malcolm H. Stern and entitled "Americans of Jewish Decent." That book weighed 10 pounds and gave the history of 25,000 Jewish individuals in America. It is extremely interesting to note that only 550 copies of the book were printed and each copy was consecutively

numbered. The book was delivered to the top Jewish community leaders in America for their personal reference files in dealing with and contacting Jews who are "Marranos" (those Jews who "Pretend" to be Christians in their community but secretly hold to their Jewish faith and race when among their own kind). Mr. Birmingham in "The Grandees" reports: "Who would expect to find the Rockefellers in the book." Stern's work traces what he calls the "Nobility of Jewry - the Sephardim who lived in Spain and Portugal as princes of the land."

Many centuries ago the Jews flooded into Spain in great numbers and through usury and stealth became vast land owners. The Jews controlled both Spain and Portugal through their monopoly over the finances of the country. It was in 1492 that King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella of Spain expelled the Jews from their country and confiscated their ill-gotten wealth. It was during this period that the Rockefeller family moved to the Turkish Empire which welcomed the Jews at that time, believing them to be a "poor persecuted people."

The grandfather of our former Vice-President Nelson Rockefeller, admitted that his family once moved from Turkey to France. It was from France that they moved to America. John D. Rockefeller, Sr., was a wealthy man even before he took over Standard Oil Co., which made their family one of the richest in the world.

No one has ever explained how this family came into such wealth as soon as they arrived in America from France. There is no known information on how the Rockefellers came into huge amounts of money in France. Some thing they got their money from the Rothschilds and were originally their agents in buying up Christian businesses in America. "Marranos" are Jews who "**Pretend**" to convert to Christianity so as to deceive Christians in their business dealings, but secretly continued to practice Judaism in private rituals. For this reason, a Marrano family like the Rockefellers would make the perfect tool for the Rothschilds of France who have for centuries used secret agents to carry on their work.

"The Thunderbolt" was the first publication to bring Vice-President Nelson Rockefeller's Jewish ancestry to public attention. This information finally

explains why he has always been able to work so closely with Jewish interests and why his administration as governor of New York was loaded down with Jews from top to bottom.

His political campaigns of the past were always directed by Jews and he was always the support of the Jewish community in all of his political races. Normally the Jews would not support a Christian multi-millionaire for political office because they would be afraid they could not control him after the election.

The fact that Jewish community leaders have long known that the Rockefellers were fellow Jews goes a long way in explaining why the organized Jewish community has always supported the Rockefeller's political ambitions. Now we can see why Nelson and David Rockefeller boosted his fellow Jew Henry Kissinger into the Nixon administration and Kissinger in turn has used his position to bring his fellow Jew Rockefeller into power.

## **Question: Where There People In America Before The Indians?**

**Answer:** Yes There Were Many.

Holocaust of Giants: The Great Smithsonian Cover-up. Noted Native American author and professor of law emeritus, Vine Deloria, writes in a personal communication: It's probably better that so few of the ruins and remains were tied in with the Smithsonian because they give good reason to believe the ending of the Indiana Jones movie in a great warehouse where the real secrets of earth history are buried

Modern day archaeology and anthropology have nearly sealed the door on our imaginations, broadly interpreting the North American past as devoid of anything unusual in the way of great cultures characterized by a people of unusual demeanour. The great interloper of ancient burial grounds, the nineteenth century Smithsonian Institution, created a one-way portal, through which uncounted bones have been spirited. This door and the contents of its vault are virtually sealed off to any but government

officials. Among these bones may lay answers not even sought by these officials concerning the deep past.

The first hint we had about the possible existence of an actual race of tall, strong, and intellectually sophisticated people, was in researching old township and county records. Many of these were quoting from old diaries and letters that were combined, for posterity, in the 1800's from diaries going back to the 1700's. Says Vine in this understanding:

Some of these old county and regional history books contain real gems because the people were not subjected to a rigid indoctrination about evolution and were astonished about what they found and honestly reported it.

The title pages of the early county and pioneer history books often included phrases like "**Carefully Written and Compiled**" and "**Lest We Forget.**"

Some time before archaeology came to subscribe the general public to its view of prehistory generations prior to Darwin's troublesome theory the pioneers thought that some of the earthworks were as ancient as could be concurrent with human habitation in America. Some among the early settlers exercised their pens assured that the earthworks were not built by the direct ancestry of the native people living in the historical period, but rather were constructed in a more remote era encompassing a different social order. They compared the "Mound Builders," with the "Indians," clearly discerning the former as belonging to an earlier time possessing a different fate or destiny from the latter.

Evidence for the occupation of this region before the appearance of the red man and the white race is to be found in almost every part of the county, as well as through the northwest generally. In removing the gravel bluffs, which are numerous and deep, for the construction and repair of roads, and in excavating cellars, hundreds of human skeletons, some of them of giant form, have been found. A citizen of Marion County estimates that there were about as many human skeletons in the knolls of Marion

County as there are white inhabitants at present! (The History of Marion County, Ohio (compiled from past accounts, published in 1883))

Mastodonic remains are occasionally unearthed, and, from time to time, discoveries of the remains of Indian settlements are indicated by the appearance of gigantic skeletons, with the high cheek bones, powerful jaws and massive frames peculiar of the red man, who left these as the only record with which to form a clew to the history of past ages. (The History of Brown County, Ohio (compiled from past accounts, published in 1883))

### **Group of Mounds in Brown County, Ohio.**

She said also that three skeletons were found at the mouth of the Paw Paw Creek many years later, while Nim (Nimrod) Satterfield was justice of the peace. Jim Dean and some men were digging for a bridge foundation and found these bones at the lower end of the old buffalo wallow. She thought it was Dr. Kidwell, of Fairmont, who examined them and said they were very old, perhaps thousands of years old. She said that when the skeletons were exposed to the weather for a few days, their bones turned black and began to crumble, that Squire Satterfield had them buried in the Joliffe graveyard (Rivesville). All these skeletons, she said, were measured, and found to be about eight feet long. (Now and Long Ago-A History of the Marion County Area by Glen Lough (1969) (This citation on West Virginia courtesy Dave Cain))

Another of many examples, this one, collected by James Mooney (1861-1921), tells of the visit of very tall people from the west:

James Wafford, of the western Cherokee, who was born in Georgia in 1806, says that his grandmother, who must have been born about the middle of the last century, told him that she had heard from the old people that long before her time a party of giants had once come to visit the Cherokee. They were nearly twice as tall as common men, and had their eyes set slanting in their heads, so that the Cherokee called them Tsunil' kalu', "the Slant-eyed people," because they looked like the giant hunter Tsul' kalu'. They said that these giants lived far away in the direction in

which the sun goes down. The Cherokee received them as friends, and they stayed some time, and then returned to their home in the west...

This kind of recorded tradition did not start with Mooney, rather beginning early in American history. During the Colonial and post-Colonial era, the information seekers were keen on gathering as much knowledge of the forgotten past as feasible through native sources. Some of it was woven into romantic tales including verse, but the main of it went into records, which, like the accumulation of earth and debris over ancient village sites, became buried in the musty stacks of old libraries considered to have no real "substance" in the emerging field of the white man's science.

Of the very early history of the region which now embraces Lake County but little can be written. The Mound Builders had occupied it and passed away, leaving no written language and but little even as tradition... These mounds were quite numerous—. Excavations—have revealed the crumbling bones of a mighty race. Samuel Miller, who has resided in the county since 1835, is authority for the statement that one skeleton which he assisted in unearthing was a trifle more than eight feet in length, the skull being correspondingly large, while many other skeletons measured at least seven feet...@ (Historical Encyclopaedia of Illinois and History of Lake County Edited by Newton Bateman, LL.D. and Paul Selby, A.M. (1902))

From the outset of North American archaeology, no federally sponsored concern has researched and collected evidence specifically emphasizing the existence of unusually tall Native Americans in prehistoric, and even in historic times. There are reasons for this oversight, though in hindsight it has placed limits on our overview of prehistory. Because there were only occasional people of large stature born among the light-skinned, European races, numbers of giants were far from anticipated in America. Scientists in Europe, in case-by-case studies, declared their giants to have been victims of pituitary disorder. Another reason was that when the private citizenry in the U.S. unearthed the bones of very tall and strongly constructed people, and when these disinterments were recorded, rarely was any comparison made with sites of similar contents. It was still a sort of wilderness in many rural areas right until the middle 1800's. In this,



each discovery was sort of "unique" only to end up in the stacks of old township libraries to be compiled later as curiosities if they survived at all. The following account originated around the year 1800:

There were mounds situated in the eastern part of the village of Conneaut and an extensive burying-ground near the Presbyterian church, which appear to have had no connection with the burying-places of the Indians. Among the human bones found in the mounds were some belonging to men of gigantic structure.

Some of the skulls were of sufficient capacity to admit the head of an ordinary man, and jaw bones that might have been fitted on over the face with equal facility; the other bones were proportionately large. The burying-ground referred to contained about four acres, and with the exception of a slight angle in conformity with the natural contour of the ground was in the form of an oblong square. It appeared to have been accurately surveyed into lots running from north to south, and exhibited all the order and propriety of arrangement deemed necessary to constitute Christian burial—(Historical Collections of Ohio in Two Volumes by Henry Howe, LL.D. (1888))

Although not regarded by the government as reliable, the oral traditions of the native people in the eastern U.S. aver of the existence of possibly two races of giants, one supplanting the other by violent means. Here we have the first inkling of some very remote prehistory preserved, through the tradition of the Chippewa, Sandusky, and Tawa tribes, (members of the Algonquin language group), the existence of giant, bearded men.

In this connection I would say that Mr. Jonathan Brooks, now living in town, stated to me, that his father, Benjamin Brooks, who lived with the Indians fourteen years, and was well-acquainted with their language and traditions, told him and others that it was a tradition of the Indians that the first tribe occupying this whole country, was a black-bearded race, very large in size, and subsequently a red bearded race or tribe came and killed or drove off all the black beards, as they called them.@ (The Firelands Pioneer (1858))

Off setting the carefully recorded diaries of the rural folk, there were popular writers who creatively developed the more contemporary histories and folk legends, leaving to cursory treatment the deeper accounts of North American antiquities. These authors, while having captured the essence of the public perception of the noble native tradition, were not reconciled to the antique body of legend. The pens of James Fenimore Cooper (1789-1851) and Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807-1882) relate virtually nothing of the tall ones. Native Americans, as we know, were discouraged from writing, although some, such as David Cusick, circumvented the bias using Christian names. Fortunately, early missionary concerns gathered oral tradition from the tribal elders concerning men of giant stature.

But even the most informative or entertaining accounts could not instil enough respect for the native people to put an end to the further destruction of the sacred sites. The attitude of the white race in general toward the red race was an abomination, totally lacking in mercy and compassion. Many of the Native American skulls were compared with European skulls, but selectively so as to depict the current native populace as being of inferior intelligence. Almost without resistance, the black seeds of racial bias were forming in the uncorrupted soil of prehistoric interpretation. Take for example the words of an important government official and popular writer, Henry Schoolcraft (1793-1864):

The Indian has a low, bushy brow, beneath which a dull, sleepy, half-closed eye seems to mark the ferocious passions that are dormant within. The acute angles of the eyes seldom present the obliquity so common in the Malays and the Mongolians. The colour of the eye is almost uniformly a tint between black and grey; but even in young persons it seldom has the brightness, or expresses the vivacity, so common in the more civilized races. (Bureau of Indian Affairs (1852))

Schoolcraft, who himself married a half-Indian woman, was apparently predisposed to labelling the native people in general as inferior. This kind of ridiculous prejudice underscored the tone for the unbridled continuation of the earthwork debacle. The result of this is accurately reflected in how archaeology was organized more than one hundred years ago, and may

be summed up in the policy of Joseph Henry, first secretary of the Smithsonian Institution. Says Henry in 1846: "The collection of data should precede theorizing..." Unfortunately, the collection of data seemed to have no end, and any subsequent theorizing was (and is) in a state of transience. The Smithsonian, playing a sort of leading role in the massive undertaking attempting to cast light on the inscrutable prehistory of the United States, inadvertently collected far too many relics to ever analyse in a comprehensive sense. Estimates of the number of mound works in Ohio alone at the end of the Colonial period topped ten thousand. Today, less than one-twentieth of these exist, and, moreover, they exist in a reconstructed form. No quarter of special status was given to any earthwork, no matter how sacred or strategic to tribal lands. It was a holocaust of an unprecedented nature, for it undermined the very morale of the native people who understood the peace of their ancestors to be ruined.

Differing only in the professionalism somewhat absent from the previous seventy years of ghoulish quests, Henry's mandate dictated emphasis on the creation of an inclusive system of excavation, recording, and description. Any analysis that followed had to be based upon this criterion. But competent analysis of anomalies rarely (if ever) came from the Smithsonian and other institutions formally engaged in the practice of exhumation. Given this understanding, it is no wonder that the Smithsonian is believed by knowledgeable people to be actively stymieing research that would produce a more enlightened view of American prehistory.

There is, however, some compensation for this oversight in that the Smithsonian, like the Peabody, and the Carnegie shortly thereafter, faithfully upheld Henry's mandate to detail, as was feasible, their mound "explorations." However, the present-day inaccessibility of the bones and objects these people removed for future study is a reflection and symptom of the proposed "oversight."

One thing that pleased us in this research effort was the fact that there were many skeletons of gigantic frame discovered and reported by the

Smithsonian, boosting the validity and value of the old township diaries, as well as the native legends. Some of these are presented below.

## **A Brief History of the Museum**

The Smithsonian Institution, easily the world's largest museum complex, began from the generous gift of James Smithson, an English scientist, in 1829. Believed born a bastard (especially in the eyes of his later detractors), Smithson was a "diligent young student," receiving a Master of Arts from Pembroke College, Oxford, in 1786. He became a distinguished scientist. The gentle man passed away in 1829, bequeathing his fortune to nephew James Henry Hungerford with the stipulation that if this man died without an heir, the remainder of the fortune would go to the United States. It seems he felt that the United States was the future of Britain. Perhaps Smithson saw the "New World" as fertile, worthy, intellectual territory.

Hungerford died in 1835. Although there was some controversy in the interim, the finding of the Smithsonian, based upon the more than a half million-dollar gift, took place officially in 1846. His legacy to the American people was, in his own words, "for the increase and diffusion of knowledge."

Since that time, the museum's collections have increased considerably, with problems in the cataloguing and location of stored finds developing due to changing standards of administrations over the last 150 years. Analogous to the Vatican with its antique cache of confiscated, problematic treasures, the booty of the Holy See may pale in comparison to the Smithsonian's boatload of diffuse evidence. Pity of it is that Smithson's request has gone into a different mode of interpretation. Instead of diffusing knowledge, it has unwittingly become confused with the problem of sprawling storage.

### **Powell and Thomas**

Grave a, a stone sepulchre, 22 feet wide, 8 feet long, and 2 feet deep, was formed by placing steatite slabs on edge at the sides and ends, and others

across the top. The bottom consisted simply of earth hardened by fire. It contained the remains of a single skeleton, lying on its back, with the head east. The frame was heavy and about seven feet long. The head rested on a thin copper plate ornamented with impressed figures...@ 12th Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution 1890-1891 (published in 1894) (Cyrus Thomas' investigations of Etowah)

Plat of the Etowah Group, Bartow County, Georgia. Grave A (found in the largest mound of the group) contained a seven-foot skeleton having a heavy frame.

In 1882, after some thirty-six years of growth and sound management, Smithsonian executive John Wesley Powell (of Grand Canyon exploration fame 1869-1872), hired Cyrus Thomas. Powell wanted this man to head up the fieldwork for the Smithsonian's newly created Bureau of Ethnology, specifically the Eastern Mound Division. Thomas was a minister and an entomologist whose broadened interests included archaeology. He was, in other words, a bible-advocating, insect-adept archaeologist who believed in the mystery of a lost race at the time of his being recruited. Powell, who was much in sympathy with the plight of Native Americans, having lived among them for a length of time, believed that there was no lost or mysterious race of mound builders. He desired to credit the downtrodden native people with the worthy and gentle arts associated with the ancient mound building societies. Subsequently, and in light of other politic considerations marking the era, Powell sought to enact these personal convictions through the instrumentality of Thomas. In spite of his personal beliefs, Thomas was not outspokenly resistant to accepting the position. Besides, Congress was allocating solid funding for this proposed ramble through the ancient landscape.

There was apparently an important decision made at this time concerning the facilitation of an enveloping theory so necessary to create order where chaos loomed. Before discharging a book, one logically creates an outline to guide one's thoughts. This was to become a hierarchical arrangement that would decide the angle of vision for the categorizing of the finds that

would be made. On one hand, the belief that others discovered North America before Columbus (such as Phoenician, Egyptian, Hebraic, Greek, Roman, Celt, Scandinavian, or even Asian mariners) was explored. On the other hand, the idea of the continent having been isolated from outside influences was put on the table. It was perhaps because of Powell's deference to the native kinship that the latter idea i.e., screening out any extra-continental visitors was adopted.

Needless to say, this was an extraordinary assumption, and one that has affected decision-making right until the present day. On the positive side it viably linked the living factions of the Native American people with the more ancient mound building folk, and shortly thereafter was responsible for the faintly successful preservation of what remained of the mound builder's legacy. From this it may be understood how aspects of Powell's work, such as analysis of the social order of the mound builders, was not a priority.

Powell's decision regarding isolation was in reality a two-edged sword. While it was a meaningful step that fostered a meagre though important harmonic between the federal government and the native people, it was regrettably based upon a false notion. An example of its contradiction is found right in the 12th Annual Report itself. Again and again Thomas and his operatives came up with anomalous evidence directly questioning Powell's sweeping suppositions.

Cave burials occur in this district in the following counties: In Grayson, Hart, Edmonson, Barren, Warren, and Fayette counties; Kentucky; Smith, White, Warren, Giles, Marion, and Fentress counties, Tennessee, and Bartow county, Georgia. These localities lie mostly in a belt extending in a north and south direction through the centre of the district.

In most of these caves, both in Kentucky and Tennessee, the bodies appear to have been laid on the floor of the cave, sometimes in beds of ashes, sometimes on a pavement of flat stones. There are, however, some instances in which the bodies have been found incased in stone slabs, and afterwards imbedded in clay or ashes. In Smith and Warren counties, Tennessee, and in Warren and Fayette counties, Kentucky, the flesh of

the bodies was preserved and the hair was yellow and of fine texture. In some cases the bodies were enveloped in several thicknesses of coarse cloth with an outer wrapping of deer skin. Some of the bodies were wrapped in a kind of cloth made of bark fibre, into which feathers were woven in such a manner as to form a smooth surface. In two cases the bodies, placed in a sitting or squatting posture, were incased in baskets. In one of the caves in Smith county the body of a female is said to have been found, having about the waist a silver girdle, with marks resembling letters. 12th Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution 1890-1891 (published in 1894) (explorations in the Tennessee District)

Armed with a self-created doctrine powered by ample funding, and with a little help later from the one-way door to the Smithsonian's inaccessible catacombs, the years that followed saw Powell and his underling nearly succeed in the obliteration of the last notions of the legendary, mysterious, and antique class of mound building people, and for that matter, any people that didn't fit into the mould of his theory. Did Powell intentionally overlook some of the archaeology so as to focus on his own special agenda?

Powell and his associates at the Bureau were quite certain that people had arrived in the Americas only sometime after the first Egyptian dynasty less than 4500 years ago! They also believed that the Mississippi Valley was sufficiently isolated from the Ohio Valley to warrant the simultaneous flourishing of quite distinct cultures over a long period. Since carbon dating was not yet discovered, Thomas used stratigraphic (after Lyell) analysis and, following the rest of the mandate, included detailed record keeping and documentation whenever appropriate. His findings were broadly accepted, and are still referenced.

Underneath the layer of shells the earth was very dark and appeared to be mixed with vegetable mould to the depth of 1 foot. At the bottom of this, resting on the original surface of the ground, was a very large skeleton lying horizontally at full length. Although very soft, the bones were sufficiently distinct to allow of careful measurement before attempting to remove them. The length from the base of the skull to the bones of the toes was found to be 7 feet 3 inches. It is probable, therefore, that this

individual when living was fully 72 feet high. At the head lay some small pieces of mica and a green substance, probably the oxide of copper, though no ornament or article of copper was discovered. 12th Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution 1890-1891 (published in 1894) (explorations in Roane County, Tennessee)

But Thomas' time was limited because of the large territory he was to explore. Under such working conditions, anomalies were put aside for future research to be, as it has turned out, forgotten. Thomas was forced to rely on the accounts of operatives in many cases. Evidently, some of these people discerned between "Indian" burials and the burials of the Mound Builders, perhaps challenging the patience of Powell.

No. 5, the largest of the group was carefully examined. Two feet below the surface, near the apex, was a skeleton, doubtless an intrusive Indian burial... Near the original surface, 10 or 12 feet from the Center, on the lower side, lying at full length on its back, was one of the largest skeletons discovered by the Bureau agents, the length as proved by actual measurement being between 7 and 8 feet. It was clearly traceable, but crumbled to pieces immediately after removal from the hard earth in which it was encased— 12th Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution 1890-1891 (published in 1894) (mounds at Dunleith, Illinois)

### **Mound Group, Dunleith, Illinois.**

"Near the original surface, 10 or 12 feet from the centre, on the lower side, lying at full length on its back, was one of the largest skeletons discovered by the Bureau agents, the length as proved by actual measurement being between 7 and 8 feet."

Regarding the problem of "intrusive" Indian burials, what kind of a time gap were these men looking at between the original burials and the later ones? As his agents uncovered the physical evidence for powerful men of towering stature, Thomas held the position that any and all skeletal remains represented the direct ancestry of the present day people. Was it not plausible to consider an extended "family" or hierarchical group of very



tall folk who served with the people? Were they selective enough in their sexual associations to appear, overall, as a race with its own peculiarities and even physical characteristics? The findings that didn't fit in to the guideline established by his superior were summarily recorded and forgotten by Thomas a legacy we have inherited today.

An old Indian mound has been opened on the farm of Harrison Robinson, four miles East of Jackson, Ohio, and two skeletons of extraordinary size and a great quantity of trinkets have been removed. Some years ago a party of relic hunters, supposed to have been sent out in the interest of the Archeological society visited the Robinson farm, and after a few days search removed a great collection of stone hatchets, beads and bracelets, which were packed and shipped to an Eastern institute, and until this recent accidental discovery it was supposed that everything had been removed by the relic hunters. It is thought by many that more relics are to be found and preparations are being made for a through investigation. (The Adair County News January 5, 1897 (Kentucky))

What has become of all the evidence? Again and again, only a single long skeleton or two was found among those of normal size. The understanding of tall, ruling chiefs and their wives was not developed at all, as is evident in these examples.

The other, situated on the point of a commanding bluff, was also conical in form, 50 feet in diameter and about 8 feet high. The outer layer consisted in sandy soil, 2 feet thick, filled with slightly decayed skeletons, probably Indians of intrusive burials. The earth of the main portion of this mound was a very fine yellowish sand which shovelled like ashes and was everywhere, to a depth of 2 to 4 feet, as full of human skeletons as could be stowed away in it, even to two and three tiers.

Among these were a number of bones not together as skeletons, but mingled in confusion and probably from scaffolds or other localities. Excepting one, which was rather more than 7 feet long, these skeletons appeared to be of medium size and many of them much decayed-- (12th Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution 1890-1891 (published in 1894) (Pike County,

Illinois)) No. 11 is now 35 by 40 feet at the base and 4 feet high. In the centre, 3 feet below the surface, was a vault 8 feet long and 3 feet wide. In the bottom of this, among the decayed fragments of bark wrappings, lay a skeleton fully seven feet long, extended at full length on the back, head west. Lying in a circle above the hips were fifty-two perforated shell disks about an inch in diameter and one-eighth of an inch thick. (12th Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution 1890-1891 (published in 1894) (Kanawha County, West Virginia))

Spring Hill Inclosure, Kanawha County, West Virginia. In the bottom of Mound 11 (upper left) was found a skeleton "fully seven feet long."

Largest in the collective series of mounds, the Great Smith Mound yielded at least two large skeletons, but at different levels of its deconstruction by Thomas' agents. It was 35 feet in height and 175 feet in diameter, and was constructed in at least two stages, according to the report. The larger of the two skeletons represented a man conceivably approaching eight feet in height when living.

At a depth of 14 feet, a rather large human skeleton was found, which was in a partially upright position with the back against a hard clay wall...All the bones were badly decayed, except those of the left wrist, which had been preserved by two heavy copper bracelets...

Nineteen feet from the top the bottom of this debris was reached, where, in the remains of a bark coffin, a skeleton measuring 72 feet in length and 19 inches across the shoulders, was discovered. It lay on the bottom of the vault stretched horizontally on the back, head east, arms by the sides... Each wrist was encircled by six heavy copper bracelets--Upon the breast was a copper gorget--length, 32 inches; greatest width 3: inches-- (12th Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution 1890-1891 (published in 1894) (Kanawha County, West Virginia))

A Section of the Great Smith Mound, Kanawha County, West Virginia. This cone-shaped mound rose 35 feet high and measured 175 feet in

diameter at its base. The interior of the mound contained a vault made of timber measuring 12 feet by 13 feet. It was positioned within the mound 20 feet above surface level.

The pressure of the time schedule doubtless made it inconvenient to seriously consider the possibility of an ancient lineage of leaders taking the form of very tall people. The fact of gigantic stature never settled in as a clue to a greater mystery, and the evidences of very tall, ruggedly built men vanished and often enough into the Smithsonian's temporary charnel house of pre-Columbian miscellany.

Three feet above—the skeleton of a large, strongly built man lay extended at full length with the face up, the head toward the east—The skull was obtained almost entire. Under it were thirteen water-worn quartz pebbles. The femur measured 182 inches... (12th Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution 1890-1891 (published in 1894) (Union County, Mississippi))

### **Group of mounds in Union County, Mississippi.**

A femur (thigh bone) exceeding eighteen inches would indicate a man of above average height, perhaps approaching seven feet. Femurs exceeding twenty inches have been found however.

Though hindsight is said to be 20/20, Thomas' methodology was little better than a government-sanctioned dissolution of the sacred burial places. He dismantled the sanctuaries and charnel houses with the fervour of a man whose first priority was to impress his employer. From Florida to Nebraska including twenty-three states and Canada's Manitoba region over the next seven years he and his agents worked like men possessed of a deadline.

A large Indian mound near the town of Gasterville, [Gastonville? Ed.] Pa., has recently been opened and examined by a committee of scientists sent out from the Smithsonian Institute. At some depth from the surface a kind of vault was found in which was discovered the skeleton of a giant measuring seven feet two inches. His hair was coarse and jet black, and

hung to the waist, the brow being ornamented with a copper crown. The skeleton was remarkably well preserved...On the stones which covered the vault were carved inscriptions, and these when deciphered, will doubtless lift the veil that now shrouds the history of the race of people that at one time inhabited this part of the American continent. The relics have been carefully packed and forwarded to the Smithsonian Institute, and they are said to be the most interesting collection ever found in the United States.@ (American Antiquarian, 7:52, 1885)

Could this special burial have been another kingly individual? In these increasingly hasty intrusions into the native burial grounds' inherent sanctity, the holocaust delivered its zenith under the officialdom action of former Union Major Powell. This man who in his youth had lived among the "Indians," somehow was insensitive to the sanctuary of their graveyards. But others came later to do a fair share of damage as well, all in the name of information gathering. The prehistory of eastern North America is not what we have been asked to accept from the efforts Cyrus Thomas, nor from the subsequent authorities who based so much of their work upon his, and the reason is worth repeating many or most of the oldest mounds and subterranean burial acreages were promptly destroyed long before any focused "scientific" effort came on the scene.

Apart from the disregard of the settlers' records, the other part of the problem is the labyrinthine mausoleum that is the Smithsonian bone and artefact collection. In sum, we today are deprived of the real knowledge of the more ancient lineage. The early settlers observed that the giants of old may have passed on their grand stature to the later native people, for there were individuals among their later progression who were of a size and build that goes beyond our current notions of Native American physicality.

## **The Telling of the Bones**

It is difficult not to understand the probability of an elite lineage of tall men and women who propagated their own genetic inheritance. These people lived, worked, and bred together. Were their marriages arranged to ensure the continuance of the grand stature in roles of leadership and

protection? In his classic *Red Earth, White Lies*, Vine says: From talking with elders of several tribes, my understanding is that the Indians were and are describing people of more than average height. In fact, some elders as a routine matter have reported that the Indians themselves were much larger and taller.

The question has been raised asking whether there was giant stature among the Native American people in earlier historic times. From Hardesty's *History of Monroe County, Ohio*, we discovered this:

He further told me of the killing of a big Indian at Buckchitawa, about the time of the settlement at Marietta. The Indians had a white prisoner whom they forced to decoy boats to the shore. A small boat was descending the river containing white people, when this prisoner was placed under the bank to tell those in the boat that he had escaped captivity, and to come to the shore and take him in.

The Indians were concealed, but the big Indian stuck his head out from behind a large tree, when it was pierced by a bullet from the gun of the steersman of the boat. The Indians cried out *Wetzel, Wetzel*, and fled. This was the last ever seen of the prisoner. The Indians returned next day and buried the big Indian, who, he said, was twenty inches taller than he was, and he was a tall man. When Chester Bishop was digging a cellar for Asahel Booth, at Clarington, many years ago, he came across a skeleton, the bones of which were removed carefully by Dr. Richard Kirkpatrick, and from his measurement the height of the man when living would have been 8 feet and 5 inches. It is probable that these were the bones of the big Indian of whom the Indian at Jackson's told me.

The Mound at Marietta Drawn by Henry Howe in 1846. Howe stated this mound was "of a magnitude and height which strike the beholder with astonishment." It's base had a diameter of 115 feet; it's height reached up 30 feet. It was surrounded by a ditch four feet deep and fifteen feet wide.

And again this: A large quantity of human bones was discovered in a fissure in the limestone near the United States Coast Guard lighthouse. A crude tomb of black stone slabs, of a formation not known on the island,

was found many years ago beneath the roots of a huge stump. Eight skeletons were found, one measuring over seven feet in height. (Sketches and Stories of the Lake Erie Islands by Theresa Thorndale, Sandusky (1898))

Some of the settlers and their descendents may have seen clearly, but the representatives of the Smithsonian and other sanctioned institutions, in spite of good intentions, lacked the kind of thoroughness in their analyses that included a broadened field of vision. We have felt heartily from the beginning of this research that the Smithsonian is the recipient of mandates put into place well over 100 years ago. It is virtually exempt from NAGPRA (Native American Graves Protection and Repatriation Act), for the reason (say they) of there being too much data to finish analysing to prepare for repatriation.

Concealing evidence that conflicts with accepted theory is common scientific skullduggery. For years the Smithsonian Institution has been accused of hiding in storage vaults things it doesn't like. In 1968 two Neanderthal-like skulls with low foreheads and large brows were found in Minnesota. As for dating, University of Minnesota scientists said they were reluctant to destroy any of the material, although carbon-14 testing only requires the burning of one gram of bone.

They were sent to the Smithsonian. Later Dr. Lawrence Angel, curator of physical anthropology at the institution, said he had no record of the skulls there, although he was sure they were not lost. We have a right to wonder whether some professional scientists mightn't find a really early date for the bones distressing.@ (American Indian Myths and Mysteries Vincent H. Gaddis (1977))

Why distressing? Because no true Neanderthal remains have ever been recognized by any Federal authorities as originating on the North American continent, what to say of the Americas in general. Is there yet today a conflict between established theory and what has been physically discovered? Is the "ghost" of Powell yet haunting the halls of the Museum?

So what is the policy of the Smithsonian? Does the institution intentionally withhold information? Is the fact of a race of giant warriors and chieftains threatening to the closed, internal doctrine of American archaeology? That there was a race of men and women possessing an unusually tall and strong physicality living over an extensive area North America has become a forgotten fact.

There are other examples, and names like the Gungywamp Society of Connecticut, Ed Conrad, and others have bizarre stories to relate about the ineptitude or simple prejudice of the Smithsonian when dealing with their materials. In these examples, there is growing appreciation for an actual cover-up.

Another grotesque twist is the Army Medical Museum's collection. According to the ABC News special "Skeletons in the Closet," the United States government acquired a real interest in Indian corpses. The Surgeon General, in post-Civil War 1868, requested that the army collect the skulls, utensils, and weaponry of Native Americans "as far as you are able to procure them." According to the report, these were to be sent to Washington, D.C. as part of a program that studied the effects of modern bullets and other weaponry on human bodies. The collection of such remains, estimated at 4,000, was taken mostly from grave and battle sites. What was left over became part of the Smithsonian collection estimated at 18,000 individuals, and this by way of the Army Medical Museum.

The objects here collected which have not been given, or acquired by exchange, have been purchased for the use of the museum by order of the surgeon-general... There is a skeleton of a giant, who, in life, measured seven feet, prepared by Auzoux and mounted by Blanchêne's method, which, if I may use that term, is really a beauty. It is as white and clean as new fallen snow, and the brass joints and screws which keep it together are bright, and of the latest style and finish...@ ("The Army Medical Museum in Washington" by Louis Bagger Appletons' Journal: A Magazine Of General Literature Volume 9, Issue 206 (1873))

Today however, bones are no longer as good a source of information as they once were thought to be, and for several good reasons. Bone, while

composed dominantly of the metallic calcium, yet is made up of organic molecules. Depending on moisture and temperature, it will decay, break down with time, and return to the condition of the soil after a certain number of centuries.

Bone evidence has created over-emphasis on certain periods of prehistory, in this region the so-called "Hopewell" and "Fort Ancient" (Mississippian) people. Thus, a great proportion of the Archaic and early Adena bones discovered were decomposed beyond preservation. Due to a lack of skeletons other more antique periods have not received the same kind of recognition save from the better scholars affecting the interested public's view of the ancient world. Ironically, the holocaust of giants, while deadening our sense of the past, may well serve as a lesson for the future.

Recommended Reading: Red Earth, White Lies : Native Americans and the Myth of Scientific Fact by Vine Deloria, Jr. (Fulcrum Pub; ISBN: 1555913881; 1997)

### Notes

[1] Genesis 9:21-24.

[2] By Noah cursing Canaan we know that Ham's mother must have been from the seed of Cain -- Satan's SEED.

[3] Genesis 9:25.

[4] Genesis 6:9

[5] Genesis 6:9.

[6] Genesis 8:20.

[7] A priest of the female procreation goddess Tanith enters and is resented as this is the celebration to honour the male sex-god, Moloch. He, "Schahabarim. owing to his mutilation —could take no part in the cult of Baal." The priests of the female goddesses were castrated with "sacred swords" and their "privy member" thrown up against the statue of the



goddess as an offering. Moses knew of these pagan rites and denounced them as related in this verse.

[8] Deuteronomy 23:1.

[9] #6172 Strong's Concordance.

[10] Genesis 9:1.

[11] Genesis 9:28-29.

[12] Genesis 9:18-19.

[13] Numbers 25:6-13.

[14] Jasher LXXII:22-37; LXXIII:35-37; XXVI:3-5

[15] Genesis 13:10.

[16] Genesis 14:10.

[17] Job 29:6.

[18] clearly Moses is speaking of how it was in his day not as it was in the days of Lot, Hence his use of the word 'is' instead of the word 'was.'

[19] Genesis 14:3.

[20] Numbers 16:35

[21] 1 Kings 18:38.

[22] 1 Kings 19:12.

[23] 2 Kings 1:9-12.

[24] 2 Chronicles 7:1.

[25] Job 1:16.

[26] Ezekiel 38:19-22.

[27] 2 Esdras 13:8-11.

[28] Proverbs 25:3.

[29] Exodus 19:6.

[30] Numbers 24:20.

[31] John 1:1-3.

[32] Genesis 14:18.

[33] Psalms 110:4.

[34] 1 Chronicles 10:13.

[35] 2 Samuel 24:18.

[36] 1 Chronicles 21:20.

[37] 1 Chronicles 21:24.

[38] 2 Samuel 24:24.

[39] 1 Chronicles 21:25.

[40] 2 Samuel 24:24.

[41] 1 Chronicles 21:25.

[42] 1 Chronicles 21:26.

[43] 2 Peter 2:5.

- [44] Genesis 5:24.
- [45] Genesis 5:27.
- [46] Joshua 10: 12-14.
- [47] Joshua 10:11.
- [48] 1 Chronicles 29:23.
- [49] Luke 1:33.
- [50] Exodus 19:6.
- [51] Hosea 13:10.
- [52] Matthew 21:43.
- [53] Matthew 13:24-30.
- [54] Matthew 13:36-42.
- [55] Leviticus 26:44-45.
- [56] Genesis 6:1-2.
- [57] Job 1:6.
- [58] Job 38:4, 7.
- [59] Genesis 6:1-2.
- [60] Genesis 6:4-6.
- [61] Matthew 24:37-39.
- [62] Enoch 7:1-14, from the Ethiopic by Laurence.

[63] 2 Peter 2:4.

[64] Jude 6.

[65] Exodus 23:28.

[66] Joshua 24:12.

[67] Daniel 12:4.

[68] Daniel 12:9.

[69] 2 Samuel 8:5, 13, 10:18.

[70] 1 Chronicles 19:7.

[71] 1 Chronicles 19:9.

[72] Psalm 83:1-18.

[73] 1 Chronicles 22:3.

[74] National Geographic, Vol. 152, No. 6, December 1977, pp. 769.

[75] To this date no one has found the remains of the bodies because of the acid content of the soil which destroys all remains in less than 100 years. Additionally, our early American settlers removed the headstones from the burial sites and placed them in hedgerows along the sides of the fields and so the headstones are not now located near the actual graves.

[76] Ezekiel 27:12.

[77] Genesis 10:4.

[78] The arif was a precenter in charge of a small congregation lacking an ordained priest of the North African Coptic Church.

[79] 1 Kings 3:16-28; 1 Corinthians 6:1-8.

[80] Deuteronomy 19:14; 27:17; Job 24:2; Proverbs 22:28; 23:10; Joshua 5:10.

[81] Exodus 18:21-22; 22:9; Leviticus 19:15; Deuteronomy 1:13-15.

[82] Deuteronomy 19:16-20; Proverbs 6:16-19; and Leviticus 19:16.

[83] 2 Samuel 22:26; Psalm 18:25.

[84] Leviticus 6:2-6.

[85] Leviticus 1-30.

[86] Isaiah in 52:11 says the same thing.

[87] See the following: Barry Fell, *Bronze Age America*, Ruggles De Latour, New York; Barry Fell, *America B.C.*, Simon & Schuster, New York; Barry Fell, *Saga America*, Times Books, New York; Cyclone Covey, *Calalus*, Vantage Press, New York; Samuel Morison, *The European Discovery of America*, Oxford University Press; Samuel Morison, *Admiral of the Ocean Sea*, Little, Brown & Co., Boston; and *Christian Crusade For Truth*, Intelligence Newsletter, March-April 1992, Deming, New Mexico.

[88] National Geographic, Vol. 152, No. 6, December 1977. p. 769.

[89] 2 Chronicles 9:20-23.

[90] 1 Kings 9:16.

[91] James 5:17.

[92] 1 Kings 18:10.

[93] This entire chapter was taken from "Intelligence Newsletter," written by Pastor Earl F. Jones, and a much more complete and informative book by Pastor Jones can be purchased from: "Christian Crusade For Truth," HC 66 Box 39, Deming, NM 88030, (505) 895-5365.

[94] 1 Kings 10:22.

[95] Deuteronomy 9:11.

[96] Deuteronomy 9:10.

[97] Deuteronomy 10:4.

[98] 2 Samuel 7:10; 1 Chronicles 17:9.

[99] Isaiah 49:12.

[100] Isaiah 49:8.

[101] Jeremiah 31:2.

[102] Isaiah 49:8-12.

[103] Acts 2:14, 22.

[104] Acts 7:38.

[105] Deuteronomy 7:1.

[106] Genesis 1:27.

[107] Psalms 132:11

[108] 1 Kings 12:20.

[109] Nehemiah 13:1.

[110] Matthew 1:12, Luke 3:27.

[111] Luke 1:5.

[112] Isaiah 45:4.

[113] Jeremiah 3:8.

[114] Colossians 1:16.

[115] Revelation 21:9, 12-14, 19:7.

[116] Acts 2:47, 5:15, 14:21, 24.

[117] Folio page 2492.

[118] Exodus 34:10.

[119] Judges 8:30-31.

[120] Judges 9:6.

[121] Genesis 10:25.

[122] Genesis 10:29

[123] Numbers 13:2 and 13:18-20.

[124] Numbers 13:33.

[125] Jude 6.

[126] Jude 7.

[127] 1 Peter 3:20, 2 Peter 2:7.

[128] Genesis 1:1-2, Job 9:5-12, Jeremiah 4:23-27, 2 Peter 3:6.

[129] 2 Peter 2:4.

[130] 1 Peter 3:19.

[131] Genesis 6:4.

[132] Genesis 12:6.

[133] Genesis 12:6.

[134] John 5:22, 27.

[135] Judges 6:12.

[136] Exodus 14:11.

[137] Exodus 14:13.

[138] Exodus 15:8.

[139] #7087 Strong's Concordance.

[140] Job 37:10.

[141] Job 38:29-30.

[142] Exodus 14:20.

[143] 2 Esdras 1:13.

[144] Exodus 14:25.

[145] Judges 11:30-31.

[146] Judges 11:35.

[147] Hebrews 11:32.



[148] Deuteronomy 32:8.

[149] Matthew 13:51-52.

[150] The phrase one blood, does not mean that all the races have the same blood characteristics. #129 Strong's Concordance states: 'alua baims, hah'ee-mah; of uncert. der.; blood, lit. (of men OR ANIMALS), fig. (the juice of grapes) or spec. (the atoning blood of Christ); by impl. bloodshed, also kindred: - blood. This when studied clearly shows that each RACE has its own blood characteristics, as well as the animals.

[151] Acts 17:24-26.

[152] Romans 15:4.

[153] John 5:43-47.

[154] Deuteronomy 18:15.

[155] Acts 3:22.

[156] Acts 7:37.

[157] Exodus 34:11-16.

[158] Matthew 5:17-20.

[159] Proverbs 16:1-6.

[160] Deuteronomy 30:19.

[161] Deuteronomy 4:2.

[162] Revelation 22:18-19.

[163] Leviticus 18:23.

[164] Leviticus 20:15-16.

[165] The child of a mixed marriage, not a child conceived out of wedlock as the clergy of organized religion would have you believe.

[166] Deuteronomy 23:2-3.

[167] Genesis 22:12.

[168] See also Hebrew 11:18.

[169] Leviticus 21:10-15.

[170] Ezekiel 31.

[171] Leviticus 19:19.

[172] Genesis 2:9.

[173] Ezekiel 11:1-25.

[174] Matthew 23:35.

[175] 2 Thessalonians 2:11.

[176] Luke 24:20.

[177] Acts 2:36.

[178] Acts 4:9.

[179] Acts 5:30.

[180] Acts 10:39.

[181] Acts 13:27.

[182] 1 Thessalonians 2:14-15

[183] Deuteronomy 32:8.

[184] Genesis 6:1-5.

[185] Genesis 6:12.

[186] Genesis 6:9.

[187] Matthew 1:3.

[188] 2 Samuel 11:3.

[189] See 1 Kings 8:53; Ezekiel 10:11; Matthew 25:32; 2 Colossians 6:17

[190] 2 Kings 6:14.

[191] Matthew 15:21-22.

[192] Jasher 71:1-11.

[193] Exodus 2:11-15.

[194] Jasher 72:23-37; 73:2; 73:31-37; 74:4-13.

[195] 1 Timothy 5:8.

[196] Genesis 2:19.

[197] Psalm 104:26.

[198] Isaiah 44:9.

[199] Genesis 1:1.

[200] Proverbs 8:22.

[201] Proverbs 8:22-31.

[202] Genesis 1:2.

[203] 2 Peter 3:3-5.

[204] 2 Peter 3:6.

[205] 2 Peter 3:7.

[206] 2 Peter 3:8.

[207] 2 Peter 3:9.

[208] Genesis 7:4.

[209] Isaiah 14:12.

[210] Isaiah 14:13-14.

[211] Isaiah 14:15-19.

[212] Isaiah 45:18.

[213] Genesis 1:3-6.

[214] Genesis 1:7-8.

[215] Genesis 1:9-11.

[216] Genesis 1:12-19.

[217] Genesis 1:20.

[218] Genesis 1:21-23.

[219] Genesis 1:24-27.

[220] Genesis 1:28.

[221] Genesis 1:29-31.

[222] Genesis 2:1-3.

[223] Psalm 104:3.

[224] Psalm 104:5.

[225] Psalm 104:6.

[226] 2 Peter 3:5.

[227] Psalm 104:7.

[228] Job 38:1-7.

[229] Psalm 104:3.

[230] Job 38:1.

[231] Ezekiel 1:4.

[232] Ezekiel 1:5.

[233] Ezekiel 1:6-7.

[234] Ezekiel 1:8-10.

[235] 2 Kings 2:11.

[236] Genesis 2:2-3.

[237] 2 Peter 3:1.

[238] 2 Peter 3:2-4.

[239] 2 Peter 3:5.

[240] 2 Peter 3:6.

[241] 2 Peter 3:7.

[242] 2 Thessalonians 2:3; 2 Peter 3:8-9.

[243] 2 Peter 3:10.

[244] Colossians 2:8.

[245] 2 Peter 3:11-13.

[246] Ephesians 1:4.

[247] Ephesians 1:4-5.

[248] Ephesians 1:7-9.

[249] Genesis 12:1-3.

[250] Exodus 19:6-8.

[251] Jeremiah 3:8.

[252] Romans 7:1 and 1 Corinthians 7:39.

[253] Isaiah 54:4.

[254] James 1:18.

[255] Daniel 2:35.

[256] Deuteronomy 32:8-9.

[257] Compare the "reaping of the earth" symbolism of Joel 3:12-14 with Revelation 14:15-20.

[258] John 3:16.

[259] 1 Timothy 2:5.

[260] Joel 3:25.

[261] Ezekiel 5:16-17.

[262] Isaiah 10:5-7; 13-15.

[263] M.A. Levy, Secretary of the World League of Liberal Jews, in a speech in Los Angeles, California, August, 1949.

[264] Esther 8:17.

[265] Romans 11:1.

[266] Hebrews 7:14.

[267] Matthew 2:1.

[268] Matthew 2:13-15.

[269] John 4:9.

[270] Romans 11:1; Philippians 3:5.

[271] See John 11.

[272] 2 Timothy 2:18.

[273] Hebrews 11:40.

[274] Zechariah 2:4.

[275] Revelation 21:14.

[276] Zechariah 2:5.

[277] Revelation 21:22.

[278] Revelation 22:15.

[279] 1 Chronicles 16:33.

[280] Isaiah 14:8.

[281] Isaiah 55:12.

[282] Isaiah 61:2-3.

[283] Ezekiel 17:24.

[284] Hosea 2:12.

[285] Jeremiah 31:27.

[286] Judges 18:31.

[287] Psalm 78:59-60.

[288] Jeremiah 7:12-14.

[289] Can there be any doubt that Jerusalem is becoming a curse to all the nations, with the damnable Jews, who - according to Christ are the children of Satan; there and their plans for world conquest, and their efforts to make Jerusalem the capital of the world? The Jews who are NOT Israelites, but are the enemies of Almighty God, the Lord Jesus Christ and the True Israelites - for have they not been so bloodthirsty and thieves that they have been driven from every country on earth at one time or another, and sometimes several times.



[290] See how the priests and prophets, which we call pastors, ministers, preachers and etc., today can control the people and cause them to do things that are against the Word of God.

[291] Jeremiah 26:6-9.

[292] Here it is plain for all to see that the brethren spoken of is the house of Israel, the True Israelites and not the Jews. That the Jews are telling the True Israelites that Palestine and Jerusalem is now theirs.

[293] Strong's #1168, which means Satan, who is the Jews god.

[294] Ezekiel 11:14-15.

[295] Ezekiel 11:23-Ezekiel 12:11.

[296] 2 Samuel 7:10.

[297] 1 Chronicles 17:9.

[298] Revelation 21:8.

[299] Ezekiel 36:2-5.

[300] not the old Zion in Palestine, but the daughter, A NEW ZION.

[301] Micah 4:10.

[302] Zechariah 2:7.

[303] Micah 4:7.

[304] Micah 4:1.

[305] Jeremiah 51:25.

[306] 1 Corinthians 3:16.

[307] 2 Corinthians 6:16.

[308] Micah 4:1-2.

[309] This appears to mean the end of oppression and crime upon the earth.

[310] Here it appears that even while Christ is on His Throne those people who are outside of Zion and New Jerusalem will worship gods other than Almighty God.

[311] It sounds like Israel is living in a perfected kingdom.

[312] What day? It is obviously in reference to a day among the last days as spoken of in verse one. Therefore, from verse six onward this is ALSO something that will come to pass in the LAST DAYS.

[313] Micah 4:3-6.

[314] This would have to be about Israel. As the description of a people driven out by God and promised by God to be regathered, fits only the Israel People.

[315] Micah 4:6-7.

[316] Micah 4:7.

[317] Micah 4:8.

[318] Acts 1:6.

[319] Jeremiah 3:14-15.

[320] Here we can see that a remnant CAN BE and indeed is A GREAT COMPANY.

[321] In the next verse is PROOF that Israel regathered would be believing Christians when they came to Zion.

[322] Jeremiah 31:6-9.

[323] Isaiah 43:5-7.

[324] Isaiah 52:2.

[325] Acts 1:6.

[326] This is the Hebrew word "charuwtz or charuts" which means "threshing" #2742 Strongs Exhaustive Concordance.

[327] Joel 3:14.

[328] Isaiah 42:15.

[329] Jeremiah 51:33.

[330] Hosea 6:11.

[331] Joel 3:13.

[332] Matthew 13:30.

[333] Mark 4:29.

[334] Revelation 14:15.

[335] Romans 1:18-32.

[336] Those names with a b Star of David are known Jews.

[337] #646 Strongs Exhaustive Concordance.

[338] 1 John 2:18-22.

[339] It should be obvious to any thinking Christian that John is here relating that he is speaking of a **Religious System** which is Judaism.

[340] 1 John 4:3.

[341] Can there be any doubt that John is talking about the Jews and their religion of Judaism. Because they have ever denied that Jesus Christ came in the flesh.

[342] 2 John 7.

[343] #684 Strongs Exhaustive Concordance.

[344] #5351 Strongs Exhaustive Concordance.

[345] 1 Corinthians 3:16-17.

[346] 1 Corinthians 6:19.

[347] 2 Corinthians 6:16.

[348] Ephesians 2:21-22.

[349] Hebrews 1:7.

[350] Revelation 17:4-5.

[351] Ephesians 1:11.

[352] John 9:41.

[353] Ephesians 4:7.

[354] Ephesians 4:11-12.

[355] 1 Timothy 5:21.

[356] 1 Timothy 3:6.

[357] 1 Timothy 3:10.

[358] Luke 22:35-38.

[359] See Exodus 22:1-4.

[360] Romans 3:19.

[361] 1 John 3:4.

[362] 1 JOHN 4:8.

[363] Romans 10:9-10; Galatians.

[364] Hebrews 12:23.

[365] Hebrews 8:1.

[366] 1 Corinthians 3:1-4.

[367] Hebrews 4:16.

[368] Romans 4:22-25.

[369] Numbers 35:31.

[370] 2 Samuel 11.

[371] Ezekiel 37:24-25.

[372] 1 Peter 5:2-3.

[373] See Judges 18.

[374] Judges 5:17.

[375] Matthew 25:24-25.

[376] Matthew 25:26-27.

[377] 2 Kings 17:24.

[378] Nehemiah 2:10.

[379] Joel 3:9-10.

[380] Isaiah 45:5-7.

[381] Hebrews 2:14-18.

[382] 2 Corinthians 5:21.

[383] Genesis 1:7.

[384] Genesis 3:6.

[385] Romans 6:23.

[386] Romans 8:28.

[387] Philippians 3:7-8.

[388] 2 Corinthians 12.

[389] 1 Timothy 6:16.

[390] 1 Corinthians

9:12; Galatians 6:2.

[391] John 5:30.

[392] Matthew 5:17.

[393] Matthew 17:3.

[394] Malachi 4:4-5.

[395] James 2:26.



## **Steven Books**

**League Enterprises  
Suite 3, 3<sup>rd</sup>. Floor  
148 Cambridge Heath Road  
London  
E1 5QJ**

For books by identity authors –  
Kenneth McKilliam, Ria Splinter  
and Richard Porter plus many  
other subjects and difficult to  
obtain books.

<http://www.stevenbooks.co.uk/category/341/Religion>

**THE NEW CHRISTIAN CRUSADE  
CHURCH**

**CALLING THE PEOPLE OF BRITAIN**

**At last the bible makes sense!**

**At last we know its meaning.**

**Its the book of the RACE**

